

Islam: Theology, Politics and History

Introduction

Purpose

There is no doubt that Islamic fundamentalism is a very important topic in modern society. Hardly a day goes by without a jihadist terrorist attack somewhere and Europe is being targeted with increasing frequency.

Much is said in the media on both sides of the equation, and most of this is false. It behoves thinking people to have some understanding of Islam, and this requires studying its theology in very basic forms and its political history, which is more straightforward – even though a full analysis of Islam would be very complicated.

My purpose is to supply a concise summary of these issues as best as I can to aid those who wish to understand what Islam is all about. I intend here to avoid inflammatory language and avoid invective comment but just stick to plain facts that all Muslims could accept as true; however some comment is necessary in pointing out differences to western ideas.

Spelling

As western scholars have not studied or standardised Islamic terms adequately, you will find multiple spelling of Arabic words, such as Mohamed, Mohammed, Muhammad, Muslim, Moslem, Koran, Quran, Qur'an etc. Here I will use 'Muhammad', 'Qur'an' and 'Muslim' as being closest to the Arabic pronunciation in my view. Multiple other words used in this paper have different spellings.

Quotations

I will endeavour to supply multiple sources for the statements made. However, if I made full quotations of many sources this would be far too onerous for the reader and would make this a very long and impenetrable document. Where necessary I will give multiple quotes from Islamic sources, such as regarding jihad because it is a much contested and misunderstood subject and requires proof.

I will supply references to the Qur'an, since many possess or can access a copy. In addition, where it is feasible, I will supply some quotes from the Sunna (Sira and Hadith) but sometimes a point is made in a long narrative or story, which would be laborious to quote. However, I will supply many references to the Hadith even though few people possess a copy.

Muslims

It is one thing that westerners know little about Islam and thus defend Islamic deceptions to support Muslims, such as immigrants bent on social destruction. However, it is another that most Muslims do not know what Islam is either. The millions of peaceful Muslims prospering in western societies would be condemned by Muhammad and probably killed.

Most Muslims have read little of the Qur'an, perhaps fragments of the Sira and probably virtually nothing of the thousands of pages of the Hadith. They get their knowledge of Islam from the preaching of imams / mullahs, from small books summarising doctrine, from sermons and mostly from leaflets and tracts distributed by this or that group. Since being a true Muslim is based on copying Muhammad in every way, knowledge of the Sunna

(the 'way': the Sira or biography and the Hadith or traditions) is vital to be a genuine Muslim. Most modern western Muslims have no clue about this.

Islam commands how you live, what you wear, how you dress, how you get dressed, how to spit, how to protect yourself from Satan, and even how to go to the toilet. Most Muslims in Britain sin against Allah everyday because their toilets face the wrong direction. Muslims do not know these things.

Radical Islam is not an aberration; it is normal Islam. The aberration is western Muslims who fail to obey Allah in the way that Muhammad commanded. Such people are hypocrites; not supporting jihad is hypocrisy, and Muhammad taught that hypocrites went to hell. The current rise of fundamentalism and radicalism in the Muslim world is really a reformation to get back to basics. The west needs to understand this. Thus ISIS is not radical; it is normal Islam practising jihad. Saudi Arabia is not abnormal; it is normal Islam practising Sharia Law. Suicide bombers are not something unusual in Islam; they are martyrs that will be rewarded for killing unbelievers.

The current British understanding of Muslims is perhaps illustrated by the sitcom 'Citizen Khan', typifying a dysfunctional Muslim family in Small Heath, Birmingham. Nothing radical here; just a typical family set in Muslim culture (families are a treasure-trove for sitcoms).¹ The fact is that Muhammad would have punished and perhaps killed such a family, as he once killed a woman in front of her husband for not sufficiently obeying him.

Citizen Khan is not a good representation of a Muslim; indeed it is offensive to Muslims. We need to know what a good Muslim is, what sources he gets his doctrine from and what the effects of this are in history. Only then will we understand what is going on today.

In this left-wing, social justice warrior, politically-correct, western world any critical thinking applied to minorities, such as Muslims, is attacked as racist. This is folly (as I explain later). Before anyone attacks me for exposing the simple doctrinal truth and historical facts about Islam you should know that I have no fear or hatred of Muslims whatsoever. I know, respect and love secular Muslims in my own family and talk to Muslims often.

Christians must love Muslims, as any other people, but they must educate themselves as to what Islam is all about because it is, and will further, impact their lives and culture.

¹ There have been sitcoms based upon right-wing families (Till Death Us Do Part); left-wing families (Citizen Smith); Jewish families (The Larkins); middle class families (Terry and June); poor working class families (The Royle Family); young families (Marriage Lines, Gavin and Stacey); aspiring mothers (Butterflies); aspiring fathers (The Fall & Rise of Reginald Perrin); obsessive husbands (Ever Decreasing Circles); prepper families (The Good Life); aberrational father-son families (Steptoe and Son); black families (Desmonds); New Age families (Absolutely Fabulous); Catholic families (Father Ted); matriarchal families (Mrs Brown's Boys, Bread); miserable old men (One Foot In The Grave); anarchic families (The Young Ones) etc. Citizen Khan is just another in a long line of a certain type of family. No, I don't watch all these programmes.

Islamic theology

Islam

Islam literally means ‘surrender’ or ‘submission’ to God (Allah). ‘Muslim’ means ‘one who lives his life according to God’s will’, or ‘one who submits’. [Technical note: ‘Islam’ is the infinitive of the Arabic verb ‘to submit’; ‘Muslim’ is the present participle.]

The profession of faith, which all Muslims must make, is the *shahada*: ‘*There is no god but god (Allah), and Muhammad is the Prophet of god*’.

Muslims used to be called Muhammadans (Mohammedans, Mahometans), but this is rejected today because it implies submission to Muhammad instead of Allah. The Victorians used the term ‘Musselmen’ or ‘Mossalman’.

Islam is more than a religious tradition; it is a civilisation and a way of life. It proclaims patterns for society in family life, civil and criminal law, business, etiquette, food, dress and personal hygiene.

There is no distinction between the sacred and the secular; all people are ‘*abd*, i.e. a servant and a worshipper of God. All aspects of Muslim society must reflect the will of Allah. For this reason there is no Islamic term for ‘spirituality’; body and spirit are combined in duty to God.

Islam first identifies people as worshippers but then it teaches the importance of the religious community. Thus the practices of Islam are intended to hold communities together separate from others. Sharia law codifies the activities of the worshipping community.

Islam is essentially a few simple principles:

- Submission to Allah the god of the Qur’an.
- How to perform this submission is known from the life and teaching of Muhammad, the prophet of Allah. [The Sunna is needed for this, not the Qur’an.]
- Muslims submit to Allah; kafirs do not and are unbelievers.
- Jihad.
- Duality based upon the difference between the Meccan Qur’an and the Medinan Qur’an where contradictions are both true.

Many of the teachings and stories of the Qur’an are reworked from older religions but two things are new; these are Muhammad and jihad.

Its authority

The triple authority

There is a triple basis for Islamic teaching: the Qur’an, the Sira and the Hadith. The Qur’an is the smallest part of the whole (14%) while the Sira is 26% and the Hadith 60%. In the texts the space given to Allah is 16% (based on word count) and Muhammad 84%.

Regarding the question of epistemology,² Islam relies on circular reasoning.

- How do we know that the Qur'an is true? Because it contains the words of Allah.
- How do we know these are the words of Allah? Because Muhammad said so.
- How do we know that Muhammad told the truth? Because the Qur'an says that he is the prophet of Allah.

There is no further revelation since the death of Muhammad.

Since the Qur'an is the revelation of Allah, no fact or argument can refute it. Even common sense cannot refute it when faced with contradictions within the Qur'an (such as peace versus war). Contradictions are statements of duality, which are both accepted by Muslims (this dualism underlies all Islam).

Those who do not accept this authority are spoken to with great revulsion and threats of violence.

First authority: The Qur'an

The Qur'an (*al-qur'an*, or traditionally, 'Koran', by some 'Kerbela') is the sacred Scripture of Islam; '*al-Qur'an*' means 'the recitation'. It is the first book written in Arabia; only poems and business documents had been written in Arabic before.

Muslims believe the Qur'an to be the word of God (Allah) by revelation to his messenger Muhammad, the Prophet, [570–632] through the angel Jibril (Gabriel) between 610–32. The original text is claimed to be engraved on a tablet in heaven. They are a collection of sayings of Muhammad written down by followers at various periods in his life but they are meant to be memorised. According to tradition, early forms of the text were written on palm-leaves, stones and shoulder-blade bones of camels. The collation was made after Muhammad's death (see later).

The claim of modern Muslims is that the Qur'an is a perfectly preserved, unified document that came wholly from the lips of Muhammad with nothing missing, no variations and nothing added later. The historical fact, confirmed even by the Hadith and the actions of caliphs, is that none of this is true (see 'Composition' and 'preservation' later). Even Muhammad said that there were seven versions.

Divided by the Meccan chapters and the later Medinan chapters

The Qur'an appears to be divided into two parts: the first part is the chapters written by Muhammad at Mecca before the Hejira in 622. The second part is the passages recorded at Medina, which reflect a more militaristic style. This is where there is more animosity against Jews and Christians after they rejected Muhammad as a prophet in Medina. This division has led some critics to affirm that there is a good Qur'an (the earlier Meccan parts) and a bad Qur'an (the later Medinan sections). It is also a reflection of the dualism that prevails within Islam and Muhammad's character. Understanding this dualism is vital to understand Islam (see 'Dualism'). Sadly, the Qur'an is not chronological; it requires scholars to know what is early and what is later.

The Meccan chapters can be reduced to the fundamental topics of establishing that Muhammad is God's prophet and if you don't accept this you are a kafir that will go to hell, a place which is referred to 147 times. This section is more spiritual and religious.

² What is truth and where does it come from.

The Medinan chapters don't mention hell very much but focus upon jihad. Thus the focus is not the kafir sentenced to hell but suffering in this life now. The kafir can be tortured, killed, beheaded, robbed and so on. This section is very political.

Style

The Qur'an is written in classical Arabic prose, consisting of 114 sūras (lit. 'unit', i.e. chapters) of varying length, each sūra being composed of a number of āyas (verses). Each sūra begins with a formulaic liturgical introduction.³

The first revelation on Lailat al-Qadr, the Night of Power, is commemorated during Ramadan. The early revelations are inflammatory but the style becomes more relaxed.

Contents

The contents are diverse but prominent themes are: the omnipotence of Allah, the duty to believe in Allah alone, descriptions of the Day of Judgment, heaven, and hell, stories of the prophets, and, in the last phase, social legislation.

The Qur'an leans heavily upon the Jewish tradition found in the Old Testament, but in a corrupted form. In Christian teaching, the Jewish prophets spoke for God to declare his will, whether of blessing or doom, and very often for punishment of spiritual adultery. There were also the messianic prophecies pointing forward to the Messiah-deliverer who would purge sin.

Muhammad adapted these to further his own agenda, which was authentication of his role as the last prophet from God. Thus Biblical stories of Adam, Moses, Jonah, David etc. were said to be about prophetic authentication; that is, Moses' mission is not about deliverance of the Jews from Egyptian bondage but punishment of Pharaoh because he would not accept that Moses was a prophet of God. Similarly, God destroyed the world in a flood because Noah was not accepted as a prophet. The stories all lead up to the declaration that Muhammad is the final prophet and men must submit to his revelation which came from the angel Gabriel, another Jewish character.

Initially Muhammad was close to the Jews until they rejected him at Medina; this relationship then changed to hatred.

The Qur'an also adapts ideas taken from the New Testament and Zoroastrianism,⁴ as well as reformatting Arabic paganism (see 'Allah' later).

The majority of the Qur'an is devoted to the kafir (unbeliever, see later). With 64% focused on the kafir and 36% filled with repetition there is not much devoted to explaining how to be a Muslim. Thus the repeated demand to follow Muhammad and the need for the Sunna ('the way', explained in the Sira and Hadith). Muhammad's precedents show how to be a good Muslim. Since there is not enough information in the Qur'an to practice Islam, the two other sources (Sira and Hadith) are necessary to help the Muslim understand how to live properly. These texts are based on the life of Muhammad and the Qur'an tells the Muslim, in 91 verses, to copy Muhammad.

³ For convenience and custom I will mostly ignore the academic phonetic accents on words, such as ū.

⁴ Zoroastrianism is a monotheistic religion of ancient Iran (Persia) founded by Zarathustra (or Zoroaster) in the 6th century BC. According to Zoroastrian mythology the supreme god, Ahura Mazda, created twin spirits, one of which chose truth and light, the other untruth and darkness. Later formulations pit Ahura Mazda (now called Ormazd) against his own evil twin (Ahriman). Zoroastrianism survives today in isolated areas of Iran and in India, where followers are known as Parsees. The Zendavesta is the sacred scripture.

Since the Qur'an is claimed to be eternal and divine, it is odd that the only explanation of how to be a Muslim derives from a man and not the eternal sacred text. These traditions of Muhammad are also of varying authority and some contradict others.

Translations

Since the Qur'an is regarded by Muslims as a literal transcription of God's revelations, for many years translations of the text were not permitted, and although today translations do exist, Muslims are taught to memorise and chant the original Arabic text.

The composition of the Qur'an

Muhammad never wrote down the whole of the Qur'an as a single, complete, edited and collated document in his lifetime; it was always meant to be recited and it was revealed over a period of 23 years (610-632). Allah through Gabriel said to Muhammad, '*We have rehearsed it to you in slow, well-arranged stages, gradually*', (Qur'an 25.32).

There are no records to say how much of the text was written down at this time; therefore, Muhammad did not edit and collate the whole text – which was why Umar's edit and collation was later necessary. It is important to note that Muhammad did not compile a standard, authorised, single text of the Qur'an.⁵ One reason for this is that while Muhammad was alive new revelations might be added to the text and abrogation had already occurred. It was only when he died suddenly in 632 that the text was complete.

Parts were written down here and there on different substrates (Qur'an 80.13-16) but it was originally mostly memorised. Some of Muhammad's closest companions memorised the Qur'an, such as: Ubayy ibn Ka'b, Muadh ibn Jabal, Zaid ibn Thabit, Abu Zaid and Abu as-Darda.⁶

As the whole was revealed slowly, no thought regarding themes, chronology or order was used; passages gradually coalesced into chapters (suras). Islamists admit that most of the chapters are composite texts containing various unlinked passages. Later Muhammad would order that a new passage be placed into an earlier one. Titles of chapters were usually given by Muhammad but some were added later.⁷

There is evidence that during his lifetime (before it was written down) the Qur'an was changed by Muhammad himself. Ibn Ishaq (the earliest source on the life of Muhammad) states that there was an additional verse in Sura an Najm that he later removed (verse 20.5; 'the satanic verse'). Later Islamic scholars denied this.

Missing portions

There are many records affirming that individual verses and even long portions of the Qur'an were omitted or lost for some reason.

- Some hadiths claim that portions of the Qur'an have been lost because the only written parts of it were eaten by a sheep or a goat.⁸
- The autographs that were kept by Muhammad's wife Hafsa are different from the standard text available today (see later).
- On the Day of Yamama, soon after Muhammad died and the text compiled, there were parts of the Qur'an said to have been forever lost as they were known only to men who died in the battle.

⁵ Bukhari, 6.477.

⁶ Bukhari, 6:488-489.

⁷ Muslim, 2.387.

⁸ Sunan Ibn Majah, (Hasan) Hadith 1944.

- See the differences (variations and omissions) in different texts mentioned later under ‘preservation’.
- Caliph Abdullah ibn Umar affirmed, ‘*Let none of you say, “I have acquired the whole of the Qur’an. How does he know what all of it is when much of the Qur’an had disappeared?” Rather let him say, “I have acquired what has survived.”*’⁹
- A number of hadiths affirm that verses were lost or known but omitted.¹⁰
- Ubayy ibn Ka’b recalled that the 33rd sura was once the same length as Suratul-Baqarah (2nd sura). This means that 200 verses are missing.¹¹ The missing section contained the verses commanding execution of adulterers.
- Companion of Muhammad, Abu Musa al-Ash’ari, said, ‘*We used to recite a sura which resembled in length and severity to (sura) Bara’at. I have, however, forgotten it.*’¹²
- The stoning passages (*rajam*) have been lost but Caliph Umar affirmed that the command did originally exist, that Muhammad did stone adulterers and so did his followers.¹³ The Qur’an today prescribes lashing only (24.2).

There are many proofs that verses have been lost. For great detail on this, including exposition of long missing passages mentioned in the Hadith, see Gilchrist, chapter 4.

Abrogation

This is the doctrine called *Naskh* (abrogation) which claims that many verses from the Qur’an have been lost and others abrogated by later verses. Burton in the *Encyclopaedia of Islam*, ‘Islamic Theories of Abrogation’, claims that 564 verses were expunged (1/11th of total).

This doctrine also explains why later verses contradict earlier ones. It is a sort of doctrine of progressive revelation, which means that the later verses have more authority than the earlier verses, or correct them. However, the Qur’an is not arranged chronologically but with the longer chapters first. Only Islamic scholars understand the time sequence and thus what is more authoritative than others.

There are 225 verses in the Qur’an that have been abrogated because they conflict with later revelation. Muhammad introduced this doctrine in Qur’an 2.106¹⁴ when confronted by contradictions. The great commentators affirmed that the abrogated verses should not be recited.

Qur’an 16.101 reaffirms abrogation, ‘*when we substitute one revelation for another – and God knows best what he reveals (in stages)*’. An example of this is the fact that initially wine was allowed and even had good effects (2.219); but later it was forbidden (5.93-94).

This explains why Islam is not a religion of peace even though some of the early chapters can be quoted to suggest that it is. The later warlike chapters overrule the earlier more peaceable verses. When Muslims quote the Qur’an and affirm that Islam is a religion of peace, this merely proves that they are ignorant of basic Qur’anic teaching.

⁹ As-Suyuti; *Al-Itqan fii Ulum al-Qur’an*, p524.

¹⁰ E.g. As-Suyuti; *Al-Itqan fii Ulum al-Qur’an*, p525. At-Tirmithi; *Kitab al-Tafsir*.

¹¹ Al-Baihaqi; *As-Sunan al-Kubra*, Vol 8, p211.

¹² Muslim, Vol 2, p501. Also As-Suyuti; *Al-Itqan fii Ulum al-Qur’an*, p526.

¹³ Bukhari; Vol 8, p539.

¹⁴ ‘*None of our revelations do we abrogate or cause to be forgotten, but we substitute something better or similar.*’

The contradictions within the Qur'an help explain the dualism rampant within Islam. Although the later verses overrule the contradicting earlier verses, both are said to be true because they stem from Allah. The self-contradictory dualism is evidenced in Muslims who claim that Islam is a religion of peace but also support suicide bombers. The Qur'an helps form such dualism.

Some modern Islamic apologists deny abrogation and say that the relevant verse is referring to revelations of Allah to Jews and Christians before Muhammad. The problem is that this is not what Qur'an 2.106 says. It clearly refers to revelations in the Qur'an, verses in this text by Muhammad.

First collection

After Muhammad's death a collection, collation and recension of the textual materials and memorised passages was necessary. This alone proves that Muhammad never gave a final complete, codified text, as many Muslims claim. Note that this claim is denied by the Hadith.

The first collection was by Salim, the freed slave of Abu Hudhaifah.¹⁵ This was one of four men that Muhammad had commanded to teach the Qur'an to others. He was one of the reciters killed at the Battle of Yamama which prompted Abu Bakr to initiate his collation.

In the caliphate of Abu Bakr, Zaid ibn Thabit, a companion of Muhammad, wrote down his memorised text with the authority of the caliph.¹⁶ However, there is evidence that other companions also wrote down their independent versions of the text. The fact that Zaid ibn Thabit complained that this was a monumental task shows that it was not the simple matter of writing down memorised passages agreed by all; which is what Muslim apologists affirm. However great Arab memorising skills are, the historic facts are that different textual variants occurred. Zaid ibn Thabit needed to search for all the passages, finding one that only one person knew.¹⁷ The search was for parchments and memorised verses. Despite the claims of modern Muslim apologists, the whole text was not found in Muhammad's own household on various materials (bones, leather, parchment etc.); the search was widespread and difficult.

The claim of some that Zaid knew all the text and just collected written portions available easily is denied by the Hadith and in fact, Zaid knew nothing of the double recitation of the text by Gabriel before Muhammad's death because his daughter Fatima said it was a secret revealed after his death.¹⁸ The records show that Zaid looked at all written variants and not just those written under the supervision of Muhammad. While some portions were commanded to be written down by Muhammad, the whole text was not.

The text Zaid produced was retained by Abu Bakr, then with Caliph Umar and then Hafsa, his daughter (widow of Muhammad).¹⁹ However, it appears that this was not a published, standardised text; in fact it was guarded and kept private. The text as memorised and written down by Muhammad's other companions had equal authority, even though they differed.

¹⁵ As-Suyuti; *Al-Itqan fii Ulum as-Qur'an*, p135.

¹⁶ Bukhari, 6.477.

¹⁷ Bukhari, 6.478.

¹⁸ Bukhari, 6:485.

¹⁹ Bukhari, Vol 6.478.

Standardised text

The Hadith affirms that the Qur'an was standardised into a final single authoritative text by the third Caliph Uthman about 30 years after Muhammad died.²⁰ The reasons were:

- People who had memorised the Qur'an were dying off.
- People who memorised the text disagreed with each other.
- Early texts were written in primitive un-pointed scripts making distinguishing letters difficult.
- It is affirmed that Muhammad himself stated that the Qur'an was recited in seven different ways.²¹ [There is no explanation in the early Sunna as to what these variations were, how they differed, whether it was simply dialectal or otherwise. It took 400 years to confirm and define the seven different readings.]²² Others affirm there were 40 different readings.²³
- Muslims complained that there were many versions of the Qur'an and a standardised text was needed to prevent errors. Distant provinces had different versions (e.g. at Damascus, Homs, Kufa and Basra). When people were drawn from these provinces into the army, there were disputes about the text. For example, there was the codex of Abdullah ibn Mas'ud used in Iraq and also the codex of Ubayy ibn Ka'b used in Syria.
- Note that there were confirmed differences of pronunciation in various dialects and differences of actual text in various versions. There was no single, definitive authoritative text because Muhammad never edited one.

All the Qur'an manuscripts that had been written down by various people were collected, vetted and then collated into an authoritative source based on that held by Hafsa; the rest were burned. The Hadith confirms this.²⁴ The editors that rewrote the Qur'an into 'perfect' copies were: Zaid bin Thabit, Abdullah bin AzZubair, Said bin Al-As, and 'AbdurRahman bin Harith bin Hisham. Originally there were seven different versions, as confirmed by Hadith Al-Muwatta, Hadith 15.5 [see table]. The choice of Zaid's version held by Hafsa was a political choice of Uthman. The original version of Zaid was corrected by the new team of editors.

Uthman's decision was to standardise the text by burning all the variant textual versions and compile the standard text according to the Quraysh dialect. The three co-editors of Zaid's work were of the Quraysh tribe. This dialectal editing must have been minimal as no vowel points were added to the text at that time.²⁵ This led to a period of permitted variations in pronunciation and recital because there were no vowel points for 300 years (934 AD).

The Qur'an was subsequently edited again in later periods; for example the revision of Al-Hajjaj ibn Yusuf in Iraq during the caliphate of Abd al-Malik. These changes are reflected

²⁰ Bukhari, Vol 6.479.

²¹ Al-Muwatta Hadith, 15.5. Muslim; Vol 2, p390-391.

²² The seven readings are those of: Nafi (Medina), Ibn Kathir (Mecca), Ibn Amir (Damascus), Abu Amr (Basra), Asim, Hamzah and al-Kisai (Kufa). Over the years only those of Nafi and Hafs (the recension of Asim) became widely used. Modern printed Qur'ans follow Asim through Hafs.

²³ Abu Dawud; *As-Sunanul-Kubra*, heading: Kitab al-Huruf wa-al Qira'at.

²⁴ Bukhari, 33,23.

²⁵ The early Arabic alphabet only had 17 consonants; one consonant could reflect two or more letters. Only later did vowel marks appear above and below letters (as in Hebrew).

in the Qur'an today.²⁶ The final version with vowels was developed by Ibn Mujahid, who fixed seven canonical readings and outlawed all others.

Therefore, from Islamic sources, we can see that there is no certainty that the Qur'an of today is actually what Muhammad originally said/wrote.

To this day, the recitation of the Qur'an differs in various parts of the world.

Ancient Qur'anic manuscripts have also been discovered that differ from the present standard versions of the Arabic Qur'an (e.g. the Samarkand Codex).

There is no critical edition of the Qur'an, nor are there standard translations of the Arabic text into European languages.

Timeline

| Date | Event | Ref |
|--|--|--|
| 632 | Muhammad never collated all the verses of the Qur'an into a single authoritative manuscript before he died. The Qur'an was supposed to be memorised and recited. What was kept by his wife differs from the modern standard text. | |
| 632-634 | Umar, concerned about the deaths of those who had memorised the Qur'an asked the Caliph Abu Bakr to collate the versions. Abu Bakr commissioned Zaid ibn Thabit to collect and collate the texts into an authoritative reading. The final manuscript was given to Umar. | Hadith. Vol 6, 'Interpretation of the Qur'an', Hadith 201. Bukhari, 6.477 |
| 644-656 | Caliph Uthman decided on a new collation due to disputes over the correct reading. Zaid ibn Thabit was chief editor. His text was compared with the text held by Umar's daughter, Hafsa, which was considered authoritative. The final authorised version was completed in 650. All other versions were burned. According to Uba ibn Ka'b there had been over 200 versions (As-Suyuti, Itqan). 15 primary codices were written. The version authorised by Uthman was called 'The Medinan Code'. This however, did not standardise pronunciation since there were no vowel points. Some early codices survived and were around in the next century; none survive now. | Hadith, Vol 6, 'Virtues of the Queen', Hadith 509. Vol 4, 'Prophet and his companions', Hadith 709. Vol 6, 'Virtues of the Qur'an', Hadith 510. Vol 9, 'Judgments' Hadith 301. |
| | Al-Hajjaj Ibn Yusuf changed several words from Uthman's version. | |
| 8 th -9 th century | The Samarkand Manuscript version differs in several places from Uthman's version, sometimes twisting a verse into its opposite. | |
| 935 | Qur'anic scholar Ibn Mujahid (d.935) listed ten different readings available in his time. | |
| 1924 | The version of Asim of Kufa (through Hafsa) was adopted in the Egyptian edition of the Qur'an issued in Cairo. It has signs for recitation and became the standard text. | |
| | The version of Nafi of Medina was adopted in the rest of North Africa. | |
| | An ancient version found in Yemen differs from the standard text. | |
| | | |

Preservation

The claim of Islam is that the Qur'an has been preserved in its original form from Muhammad to today. This is historically wrong. It is also claimed that the text is perfect, coming down from heaven without any change or deletions; but if it is perfect, why has it been changed so many times? It is claimed that the text is so perfect that only Allah could have achieved this; thus Muslims traditionally state: '*One text; no variants*'.

As we have seen, the text has changed from the very beginning, even in Muhammad's lifetime; verses have been removed, others altered, others added; even Muhammad said there were seven different variants from God. Qur'ans that differed from the standardised version were burned during the reign of Uthman; the decision to elevate one version was

²⁶ Ibn Abi Dawud; *Kitab al-Masahif*, p117.

made by men. Islamic scholars have even averred that there had been over 200 versions; who should decide which one is correct?

The following facts are relevant.

- Muhammad himself occasionally forgot parts of the text.²⁷
- Parts of the text were permanently lost when eaten by animals.
- After the Battle of Yamama many passages were lost because the men that had memorised them were killed.²⁸
- Before the collations by Abu Bakr and Uthman, companions of Muhammad had collated their own codices of the text and these were all different.
- Zaid found one man who alone knew two verses and where to put them.²⁹ This proves that there were not numerous men who knew the whole text precisely.³⁰ It also proves that Zaid missed these verses completely.³¹ The version produced by Zaid for Abu Bakr was not issued as the standard text.
- The choice of Zaid's version for a standard text was made by a man, albeit a caliph (Uthman), not Muhammad.
- The total variants between Zaid's version and the many others fill 350 pages in Jeffrey's, *Materials for the History of the Text of the Qur'an*.
- The fact that Uthman burned the other versions shows that there was no agreement between them. If it were merely differences in pronunciation that led to differences (as claimed), why then were the texts burned? Furthermore, at this stage there were no vowel points in the texts; thus differences in pronunciation would not have occurred. Remember, these variant texts were written by Muhammad's closest and most trusted companions. Uthman's decision was arbitrary. [Imagine if someone were to burn ancient Qur'ans today!]
- Uthman's decision caused anger and resentment amongst many Muslims.
- Despite the claim of a perfect Qur'an, Zaid's version was immediately corrected and Uthman ordered that a recension take place.³² Most notably, the Medinan dialect of Zaid was changed to the dialect of the Quraysh tribe. All this points to more than minor details.
- In this final recension Zaid realised that he had missed out another verse, which was later found.³³
- Despite Uthman's efforts, disputes continued to arise. Ayesha, widow of Muhammad, added a portion to Qur'an 2:238, affirming that she had heard Muhammad state this.³⁴ The words she added to her codex were also recorded by Ubayy ibn Ka'b and also the codex of Umm Salam (another widow of Muhammad).
- Muhammad had stated that the authorities on the text to be listened to were first Abdullah bin Mas'ud (his close colleague) then Salim, Mu'adh bin Jabal and Ubayy

²⁷ Sunan, Abus Dawud, Vol 3.1114. Cf. Qur'an 2.106.

²⁸ Ibn Abi Dawud; *Kitab al-Masahif*, p23.

²⁹ Bukhari, Vol 6.478.

³⁰ The claim of Islamist apologists that these verses were known but only one man had them written down is not found in the Hadith but is found 800 years after Mohammed's death in a commentary (*Fath al-Baari*, vol 9.12).

³¹ Ibn Abi Dawud, *Kitab al-Masahif*, p11. There is confusion in the Hadith as to whether this occurred under Abu Bakr or Uthman.

³² Bukhari, Vol 4.466.

³³ As-Suyuti, *Al-Itqan fii Ulum as-Qura'n*, p138. Bukhari 6.479.

³⁴ Ibn Abi Dawud, *Kitab al-Masahif*, p87.

bin Ka'b.³⁵ Yet Uthman destroyed the texts of these. Muhammad made no mention of Zaid, whose text became authoritative. Ibn Abi Dawud delineates 19 pages of hundreds of variants between Abdullah's text and Zaid's.³⁶ Many of the variants are included in Ubayy's text. When Uthman ordered the versions to be burned, Abdullah bin Mas'ud refused to hand over his copy believing his version was more authentic. In areas where Abdullah's version had become the standard (such as Kufa, Iraq) they refused to use Zaid's version. After all Abdullah bin Mas'ud had been a Muslim reciting the Qur'an since early Mecca before Zaid was born.³⁷

- Ubayy ibn Ka'b was said by Muhammad to be the best reader of the Qur'an.³⁸ Umar, the second caliph, confirmed this.³⁹ Ubayy's codex contains very many variant readings from Zaid's text. These variants often agree with Mas'ud's text. Thus the best authorities, on the recommendation of Muhammad, have texts that disagree with the standardised Qur'an. It is not credible that the standard Qur'an today is exactly the same as that recited by Muhammad, when the companions of Muhammad that knew the Qur'an best disagree with it. These differences are not niceties of pronunciation, as claimed by Muslim apologists, but different words and even different clauses and at least one whole verse. In fact, Ubayy's version has two extra suras (the 'charm suras').⁴⁰

It is clear that the hypothesis that the Qur'an has been perfectly preserved to the last dot and letter cannot be sustained in the light of the many textual differences that existed in the early codices.⁴¹

Muslim sources for information on the Qur'an text

The Sirat Literature

- Muhammad ibn Ishaq: *Sirat Rasul Allah*.
- Muhammad ibn Sa'd: *Kitab al-Tabaqat*.
- Muhammad ibn Umar al-Waqidi: *Kitab al-Maghazi*.

The Hadith

- Muhammad ibn al-Bukhari: *Sahih al-Bukhari* (9 volumes).
- Muslim ibn al-Hajjaj: *Sahih Muslim* (4 volumes).
- Sulaiman Abu Dawud: *Sunan Abu Dawud* (3 volumes).
- Abu Isa Muhammad at-Tirmithi: *Al-Jami as-Sahih* (5 volumes).
- Malik ibn Anas: *Muwatta Imam Malik*.
- Abu Bakr Ahmad al-Baihaqi: *As-Sunan al-Kubra* (10 volumes).

Clarity

The Qur'an claims for itself that it is *mubeen*, that is, clear. Yet many Islamic scholars have repeatedly affirmed that one fifth of it is incomprehensible.

If you look at it, you will notice that every fifth sentence or so simply doesn't make sense. Many Muslims – and Orientalists - will tell you otherwise, of course, but the fact

³⁵ Bukhari, 5.96.

³⁶ Ibn Abi Dawud, *Kitab al-Masahif*, p54-73.

³⁷ Ibn Abi Dawud, *Kitab al-Masahif*, p15, 17.

³⁸ Ibn Sa'd, *Kitab al-Tabaqat*, vol 2, p441.

³⁹ Bukhari, vol 6, p489.

⁴⁰ As-Suyuti, *Al Itqan fii Ulum al-Qur'an*, p153.

⁴¹ Gilchrist; p107.

is that a fifth of the Koranic text is just incomprehensible. This is what caused the traditional anxiety regarding translation. If the Koran is not comprehensible – if it can't even be understood in Arabic - then it's not translatable. People fear that.⁴²

There are also a number of contradictions on essential issues that are usually explained by progressive revelation.

Regarding Arabic; some Muslim apologists claim that westerners cannot understand the Qur'an because they don't speak Arabic. This is nonsense.

Firstly, millions of modern Muslims (in fact one billion) do not speak even modern Arabic. If reading Arabic is necessary then millions of Muslims are apostates. The Qur'an never stipulates this qualification but claims that it is universal for all humanity at all times.

Secondly, the Arabic style used by the Qur'an is classical Arabic, which is very different from modern Arabic (like Chaucerian English to Modern English). Even modern Arabs cannot read classical Arabic and very few can write it. What's the point of a religion that only a handful of people can understand the main scripture?

To summarise:

- Muhammad never wrote down the whole of the Qur'an as a single complete document in his lifetime; it was always recited.
- There is evidence that during his lifetime (before it was written down) the Qur'an was changed by Muhammad himself.
- The early scripts were un-pointed making distinguishing words difficult.
- Some Hadiths claim that portions of the Qur'an have been lost because the only written parts of it were eaten by an animal.
- Muhammad stated that there were seven different versions.
- The Qur'an was standardised into a single authoritative text by Caliph Uthman about 30 years after Muhammad died, using several editors.
- The Qur'an was subsequently edited again in later periods.

Criticisms

Opponents of Islam claim that there are multiple self-contradictions, (which is an accepted fact) but there are also historical errors, logical errors, archaeological errors and mathematical errors. It is cited by critics that these howlers result from the fact of Muhammad's illiteracy (which we discuss later) and his reliance upon oral Jewish tradition.

For example:

- Qur'an 17.1 mentions that God took Muhammad to the al-Aqsa mosque in Jerusalem. However, this was not yet built during his lifetime (built 705) and the Muslims only took Jerusalem in 637 after Muhammad's death in 632.
- Qur'an 20.92-95 shows Moses confronting a Samaritan. No one was called by this name for another several hundred years after Assyria conquered Samaria (Israel or the Northern Kingdom).
- Qur'an 66.12, 19.20 says that Mary the mother of Jesus was the daughter of Imran (i.e. Amram, Num 26:59), the sister of Aaron & Moses (Miriam). This is a mistaking of people, but a big mistake comprising a 1500-year difference.

⁴² CEMB forum, GERD-R Puin; 'The Quran – Both altered and changed'.

- Qur'an 40.38 depicts Haman as a minister of Pharaoh.
- There are many more such examples.

In many cases the stories in the Qur'an are incomplete and hard to follow. There are two types of stories: 1) retelling of old Arabic stories; 2) retelling of Jewish scriptures.

There is a great deal of repetition. For example, the story of Moses is repeated 39 times in different forms. If the repetition were to be removed the book would be reduced by 50%.

Conclusion

The claim that the text of the Qur'an is divinely inspired, coming direct from the mouth of Muhammad, and is perfectly preserved from Muhammad to today is just not tenable. Even Islamic sacred texts affirm this openly. This is not controversial.

From the very beginning the text of the Qur'an varied according to the memories of those who recited it and Muhammad never collated his sayings and edited them into a single cohesive unit.

To provide a standardised text, various caliphs ordered a purge of variant readings and collated / edited what was available into a single document; most notably Uthman. However, variant texts and variant readings continued for hundreds of years aided by the lack of vowel points in the Arabic script.

Summary of composition and preservation

- The Qur'an was compiled piecemeal with no single codex being written in Muhammad's time. It couldn't be compiled until Muhammad died and stopped adding to it.
- It is unstructured, non-chronological, with no introduction and no conclusion.
- It was recited by Muhammad's companions in different Arabic dialects.
- After Muhammad's death some portions were lost when a number of reciters died at the battle of Yamama.
- This event prompted a number of Muslims to compile their own codex; which led to a large number of variant readings and variant dialectal differences.
- Uthman tried to standardise the text. No copies of this are available today (despite claims otherwise). The Topkapi and Samarkand codices are not Uthmanic originals but are 2nd century Kufic scripts.
- However, passages were missing from Zaid's text requiring further revisions.
- After Uthman died, al-Hajjaj, governor at Kufa, made 11 distinct emendations plus minor corrections.
- The varying dialectal variants survived, as there were no vowel points yet and some consonant signs were used for two different letters.
- Three hundred years later Ibn Mujahid limited these variants to seven.
- Five of these variant readings died away. With the printing of the text, the reading of Hafs predominated.
- The usual text used today is Zaid's version, corrected by al-Hajjaj, and read according to one of the seven reading variants.
- The earliest codices extant today cannot be dated before 150 years after Muhammad's death. Over time a number of different scripts were used, such as al-Ma'il, Mashq, Naskh, and Kufic. These were used in different time periods and localities.

To this day there are variant types of Qur'an available in different parts of the world, despite the attempt to make a single standardised text in 1924.

Comparison with Biblical textual criticism

If a scripture is genuinely a revelation from God then its authority is not negated by a few variant readings or some minor mistakes in copying. However, if a scripture is not a genuine revelation from God, no amount of claims regarding perfect transmission will make it authoritative.

This is however, what Muslims do; they claim the Qur'an is a divine revelation and that it is also perfectly preserved without change. The problem is that it is a very simple matter of Islamic history to show that the Qur'an was changed many times and that no one knows for certain exactly what Muhammad recited.

Christians do not make this claim about the Bible. It is a simple fact that copyists made a few errors over time because printing was not yet invented.

The Bible that we have in our hands today is based upon original Hebrew, Chaldee (Aramaic) and Greek manuscripts. Christians claim that the original autographs were fully inspired without any errors. These were then copied over many hundreds of years.

Inevitably, scribal errors appeared in the copies. Thus a number of variants are known and it is the skill of translators to determine what is the best authority for a given reading. In general, there is a great deal of agreement about the form of the Bible text, though there are families of texts that differ in places, mostly in the New Testament.

In very general terms, the Old Testament is pretty much agreed, though there are variations, such as the Greek Septuagint OT translation that was in use in apostolic times, which differs from the Hebrew text in places.

Despite variations of detail, no major Biblical doctrine is impacted by these differences; there is unanimity of doctrine in all the textual families. A person can find salvation by reading from any of them. However, there are differences in the Greek NT text, which leads different Christians to prefer different textual families, most notably the Byzantine, the Majority Text or the modern eclectic (Alexandrian) text.

Then we have the many variations of translations in modern Bible versions. These are the ways that some men have chosen to translate or paraphrase Biblical texts. These vary enormously and many of them are simply deficient or downright appalling works. The fact that these are published means nothing if they are unfaithful to the literal translation of the original manuscripts. These can be dismissed.

The remaining versions that differ in style and translation approach are still united in teaching the essentials of salvation doctrine. Some are better than others. Versions that are paraphrases of the original words cannot be trusted in details. These can also be dismissed, though they can be of use for a new perspective of general meaning. Those that are literal translations, while differing, are pretty similar, with different choice of words usually indicated in footnotes. Thus the KJV, the Geneva Bible, the NKJV, the ASV, the NASB, the RSV are not that far apart. Some use the Alexandrian text, others the Byzantine text. Some versions omit a few verses and short passages as being unreliable. Christians believe that God has sovereignly guided the preservation of the text of the best versions.

Thus Christians affirm that the best Bible versions⁴³ are extremely close to the actual words God inspired men to write. In fact, over 400 years the English text has only changed in minor ways. In 999 out of 1000 verses we can believe that the words are very accurate. In only a few verses must we admit that there is some question about the form of words due to transmission issues; and these are indicated in footnotes.

Thus Christians admit that there have been variations, scribal errors, translation errors and mistakes made by men in transmission of the text. These are identified by textual scholars so that they can be avoided. They also admit that there are many Bible versions; but the ones that are poor and untrustworthy are also avoided by genuine Christians. The fact that some mischief-maker publishes a bad Bible translation is not the fault of Bible believers.

Despite all this, Christians believe that God guided good and clever men to sift through the chaff to identify what was genuine in the text and provide the church with accurate translations that truly represent God's intentions.

Authority 2: the Sunna

Arabic, literally 'form, way, course, rule'.

The traditional portion of Muslim law based on Muhammad's words or acts, accepted (together with the Qur'an) as authoritative by Muslims and followed particularly by Sunni Muslims.

Muhammad's example

The Qur'an and Islamic doctrine in general strongly affirm that in order to be a good Muslim you have to follow Muhammad's example (91 Qur'an verses command copying Muhammad). The Hadith is vital in order for a Muslim to know how to behave because he needs to see what examples Muhammad set. Thus, for example, the peaceable early verses in the Qur'an are not only overruled by abrogation but more so by the model set by Muhammad himself, who was a warlike, bloodthirsty man who was never happier than when he had a sword in his hand killing people. This is not my opinion; this is Islamic teaching: *'Muhammad ... was a child of the sword, [he was happiest] ... when he had the sword in his hand.'*⁴⁴

The Sunna is split into two sections.

The Hadith

Arabic, 'report', 'tradition' or 'narrative'.

This is a prophetic tradition describing the words and actions of the prophet Muhammad; it is a collection of short stories and sayings; the traditions of Muhammad that gradually appeared 200+ years after Muhammad's death. The stories result from chains of witnesses (*isnad*) and ascertaining an authentic hadith relates to how sound the chain is and whether there is a witness to it. Scholars seeking to determine authenticity end up being subjective and trusting their own speculations.

⁴³ In my view the KJV, the Geneva Bible, the NKJV.

⁴⁴ Sharaf ad-din Ali Yazdi, see later.

From the beginning fabricated hadiths flooded the market. One man alone confessed that he had invented 4,000 hadiths. The collectors of traditions justified their choices on the basis of the *isnad* rather than the veracity of the story itself. To this day different hadiths are respected by different sects of Islam.

These sayings frequently contradict each other; so the progressive revelation doctrine developed called abrogation; that is, the latter sections carry more authority than the former ones. Furthermore, the Qur'an overrules the Hadith where contradictions arise.

These hadiths provide an official guide for all aspects of Muslim life, based upon what Muhammad would have done. For example, one cannot learn how to pray from the Qur'an but must learn this from the Hadith.

Six collections were compiled in the 9th century. The most revered are:

- Al-Sahih - 'the sound (hadiths)' compiled by al-Bukhari (d. 870) [*Sahih of al-Bukhari*]. These are the most reliable 6,720 hadiths.
- Abu Muslim (d. 875) [*Sahih Muslim*].

These are traditionally considered to be sound hadiths going back to Muhammad's contemporaries.

While most hadiths concern Muhammad, some are about his close companions and later caliphs: Ali, Umar, Abu Bakr and Uthman, 'the rightly-guided caliphs'.

Modern scholarship is divided on the authenticity of the Hadith stories; especially since many of them grew out of later theological debates. For example, the rivalry between the Umayyads and the Abbasids resulted in hadiths being fabricated to favour one or the other, plus traditions were invented to favour one or another school of law. Some Muslims reject the Hadith altogether, averring that it represents a tradition long after Muhammad.

Some subjects of hadiths

- Muhammad: multiple stories denoting how he did absolutely everything from drinking, to combing his hair, to putting on his shoes, to relieving himself. We have more detail on Muhammad than any man in history.
- Beheading: [Bukhari 5. 58.148.]
- Jihad: the earth is for Muhammad; the spoils of war are lawful for him alone [Bukhari 11.7.331]. Muslims must fight for Allah and not sit at home; cf. Qur'an 4.95 [Bukhari 6.60.118]. Jihadis will be rewarded [Bukhari 2.24.522]. Jihadis will not go to hell [Bukhari 4.52.66].
- Apostates: apostates must be tortured and brutally killed [Bukhari 8.82.797].
- Art: Muhammad hated pictures [Bukhari 8.73.130].
- Magic: Muhammad believed in magic and 'the evil eye' and that a spell was once placed upon him [Bukhari 4.53.400; 4.55.590; 7.71.636].
- Tattoos: Muhammad forbade tattoos [Bukhari 7.71.636].
- Yawning: yawning is caused by Satan [Bukhari 8.73.242].
- Satan: there are many stories about Satan causing this or that, such as bad dreams or oversleeping; plus many legalistic directions to overcome Satan, such as keeping plates clean and covered, closing your gates at night etc.
- Trees: Muhammad learned a revelation of truth from a tree [Bukhari 5.58.199].
- Jinns: Jinns eat bone and dung [Bukhari 5.58.200].

- **Predetermination:** [Bukhari 4.55.549].
- **Flies:** one wing of a fly carries disease but the other wing carries the cure [Bukhari 7.67.446].
- **Failed healing:** Muhammad commanded a man to drink honey to cure diarrhoea but it made the condition worse. Muhammad's response was that his stomach was lying [Bukhari 7.71.614].

The Hadith is filled with such oddities. There are detailed instructions on things like: how to spit, which direction to face when defecating, what to do when breaking wind etc.

Criticism

Opponents point out that many hadiths contradict other hadiths and the Qur'an.⁴⁵ Plus there are many anachronisms where a person is said to debate something with someone, but they had died long before this could have occurred.⁴⁶

The Sira

[*Sirat Rasul Allah.*] The authoritative biography of Muhammad written by Ishaq. It is over 800 pages long in fine print.

The key to understanding Islam is to understand the life of Muhammad.

Other sacred and influential books

Commentaries etc.

These include commentaries (*Tafsir*) on the Qur'an, biographical studies of Muhammad and other leaders, historical works on the development of Islam, philosophical writings, mystical writings, pilgrimage journals, legal and theological writings plus Islamic poetry.

These were written by various caliphs, religious leaders and others over time and are given varying importance. Most of them are not available in English.

Biblical books

Islam accepts parts of the Bible as divinely inspired:

- The Pentateuch (*Torah*).
- The Psalms of David (*Zabur*).
- The Gospel of Jesus (*Injil*).

These are of less authority than the Qur'an.

Key religious teachings

The Five Pillars

There are 'Five Pillars' of Islam: the profession (*shahada*), prayer, almsgiving, fasting and the *Hajj* ('pilgrimage').

The profession or confession of faith (shahada)

See earlier. It is:

I bear witness that there is no god but God; I bear witness that Muhammad is the Apostle of God.

⁴⁵ E.g. the Hadith commands that adulterers be stoned while the Qur'an merely commands a lashing.

⁴⁶ E.g. placing Umar in the time of Zaid: As-Suyuti; *Al-Itqan fii Ulum al-Qur'an*, p528.

Prayer (salat)

Muslims must pray five times a day in a certain prescribed manner preceded by ritual washing and movements (dawn, midday, mid-afternoon, sunset, night).

Alms

This is called *zakat*. Sharia law dictates various amounts according to possessions but common practice is 2½% of net earnings.

Fasting

Fasting is done from dawn to dusk on the special days of fasting during the month of *Ramadan*.

Hajj

This is the famous pilgrimage to Mecca which should, if possible, be done at least once in a lifetime.

Dogmatic theology

There is no systematic treatment of teaching on any doctrine given in the Qur'an.

God

It is noteworthy that there is little mention of God, especially in the early parts of the Qur'an. The earliest mentions use the title, 'Lord' (*rabb*). Later the title of 'the Merciful' (*al-rahman*) is used. Later still the term 'Allah' (already used by polytheists) was introduced; note Qur'an 17.110.⁴⁷ Gradually, 'Allah' replaced 'the Merciful'. Later parts of the Qur'an mention a number of epithets for God; such as: the Knower, the King, the Preserver, the Compeller, the Maker, etc. Thus Muslims claim there are 99 names for God.

While later parts of the Qur'an emphasise that God is one, earlier parts admit other deities, three goddesses worshipped in Mecca are mentioned in Qur'an 53.19-20. In revisions of this Sura, they were said to be mediators, then angels, then just names invented by the Meccan's forefathers. In other passages dating to before the Hejira in 622 deities are demoted to the level of *jinn* (spirits) before they are said to not exist at all (Qur'an 6.100, 34.40-42, 37.158-166).

Monotheism

Muhammad is devoutly monotheistic. This is possibly because, depending on oral tradition and not having a Bible translation, he thought that Christians worshipped a trinity of a holy family: God the Father, Mary the mother of Jesus and Jesus her son. This seemed like pagan polytheism to him, but it was due to his ignorance of the truth about the Trinity.

Deceiver

God is said to be a great deceiver in Qur'an 13:42.⁴⁸

Allah

Claims that Allah is the God of the Bible are false.

The root of the Hebrew common word for 'God', *Elohim*, is *alah*, and the singular of *Elohim* is *Eloah*. This was a general term in use in ancient times along with *El*, also used by other religions; this does not identify the Islamic *Allah* with Yahweh. The Hebrew text claims that *Elohim* is the supreme God, the God Most High, God Almighty, whose personal

⁴⁷ 'Call upon Allah, or call upon Rahman: by whatsoever name you call upon Him (it is well).'

⁴⁸ 'Those before them did devise plots [deceive]; but in all things the master planning is Allah's.'

name is Yahweh. He is known by his decrees and character, which are very different to Allah. There is also no association of Yahweh with the moon, apart from creating it.

The Arabic word for 'god' is *ilah*, with *al* meaning 'the'; therefore, *al* with *ilah* becomes *Allah*. Arabic Christian Bibles use 'Allah' to translate the word 'God'. This also does not mean that Islam's Allah equates to Yahweh. It is the same as using 'Lord' to describe God, where many religions use the word.

LITTLE-KNOWN FACTS ABOUT ALLAH

- The Qur'an never defines Allah (Islam has little dogmatic theology).
- Allah is the chief deity and the special deity of the Quraysh tribe.
- Allah existed as the name of at least one god long before Islam appeared. [Most Muslims do not know this.] Note that the name Abdullah ('slave of Allah') had been in use for centuries; Muhammad's father was named Abdullah.⁴⁹
- The name of the god of Islam is the name of the ancient Arabic moon god. Allah was the personal name of the moon god, who was also the supreme God; one of 360 idols worshipped in Mecca. Worshippers of the moon god prayed while bowing towards the Ka'aba in Mecca that houses a meteorite and visited it once a year. Also note that the symbol of Islam seen on top of mosques is the crescent moon. Different tribes gave the moon god different names, such as Hubul, Sin, Ilumquk, Al-ilah; 'Allah' was derived from the latter. A statue of Hubul stood on top of the Ka'aba; the Ka'aba was originally considered as the house of the moon god. Allah gradually replaced Hubul as the name of the moon god; thus the Ka'aba became known as '*the house of Allah*'. In the Qur'an Allah swears by the moon. In Islam the moon is considered as the holiest astronomical object and the guiding light of rituals.
- In Qur'an 53.19-20 Muslims were told to worship al-Lat (goddess of vegetable life), al-Uzza (=Venus) and Manah (goddess of destiny); these were known as the daughters of Allah. These verses ('the satanic verses') have been abrogated out of the Qur'an.
- Many rituals in Islam are connected to pagan worship that existed before Islam. Muhammad adopted these in order to secure the support of Arabs still connected to cultural pagan events, such as festivals. These include: a pilgrimage to the Ka'aba once a year, Ramadan, running around the Ka'aba seven times, kissing the black stone and many more. For this reason some have averred that Islam is less a brand new monotheistic religion but a reformed paganism.

Jinn

These spirits of pre-Islamic Arabia can be either good or evil and appear in the Qur'an many times. They are spirits somewhere between angels and men. They are created from smokeless flames; they eat, drink and reproduce and are capable of faith or unbelief.

Iblis is the Qur'anic name for the archangel Lucifer, cast out of heaven to become Satan (or *Shaitan*). Evil jinns are also called 'satans'.

The jinn, demons and Iblis are not mentioned in the parts of the Qur'an dating from the establishment of Islamic beliefs after the Battle of Badr in 624.

⁴⁹ Note Albert Hourani; A History of Arab people, Belknap Press, Harvard University (1991), p16: '*The Islamic name for God was "Allah", which was already in use for one of the local gods, it is now used by Arabic-speaking Jews and Christians as the name of God*'.

Angels

These appear as invisible, abstract symbols of God's power. Islamic creeds do not articulate the doctrines of angels or jinn or Satan very much but popular Islam makes much of them.

There are four archangels: the chief angel is said to be Gabriel (*Jibril*) – the bringer of revelation, much confused with the Holy Spirit. Michael (*Mika'il*), the guardian of the Jews. Israfil, the summoner to resurrection. 'Izra'il (cf. Azrael),⁵⁰ the messenger of death who separates the soul from the body.

Angels are claimed to have pure bodies created of light; that they neither eat nor drink, nor reproduce. They have various forms and offices; some adoring God others singing praises to him, while others intercede for mankind. Some are employed in writing down the history of men (two assigned to each man to assess goodness or wickedness) while others carry the throne of God.

Jesus Christ

Some Muslim apologists affirm that Christians and Jews have nothing to fear from Islam since they are '*people of the book*' (i.e. OT). This, however, is false.

In Islam, a Christian is only a person who accepts the following:

- There is no Trinity.
- That Jesus was only a man and not God in the flesh.
- Jesus is only a prophet of Allah, but junior to Muhammad.
- Jesus was not crucified (Qur'an 4.157) but Judas died impersonating him (according to later commentators).
- Jesus was not a substitutionary sacrifice for sins; man pays for his own sins.
- Jesus was not resurrected.
- He will return to establish Sharia law.

Revelation

The early (Meccan) parts of the Qur'an do not mention revelation or prophecy. In later parts prophets are referred to as 'messengers' or 'ambassadors'. In this early period the Qur'an does not explicitly describe Muhammad as a messenger of God (*rasul Allah*). Only after the Hejira in 622, and after the Battle of Badr in 624 (the Medinan parts), does the role of prophet (*nabi*) become prominent in the Qur'an; it is then that Muhammad came to be included with OT prophets descended from Abraham, the first monotheist and thus a Muslim.

Muhammad is said to confirm true teaching that came from earlier prophets, such as Noah, Moses or Jesus: The Qur'an lists 28 prophets of Allah, including Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, Jonah and Jesus. Only later did Muhammad come to be considered as the '*last and greatest of the prophets*'.

Some traditions claim that there have been 224,000 prophets, others 124,000, another 313 apostles, six of them with special commissions starting new dispensations (Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, and Muhammad).

⁵⁰ Muhammad adapted the Jewish term Azrael or Azriel ('help of God') to identify the angel of death. The Kabbalistic Zohar depicts Azriel as a high-ranking angel. 'Azrael' has been used as the name of an avenging vigilante super hero in American comics, such as Batman. The name of Azrael is not Biblical.

Regarding scripture, Islam teaches that God, in various times, gave revelations to prophets who wrote sacred books. The number of these books is 104, ten given to Adam, fifty to Seth, thirty to Enoch, ten to Abraham; and the other four, being the Pentateuch, the Psalms, the Gospel (*Injil*), and the Qur'an, delivered to Moses, David, Jesus, and Muhammad. Revelatory scripture is now closed. All except the last four are now lost. The Qur'an is the foremost authority.

Man

Islam teaches the creation of man from dust, mud or clots of blood with potential for good or evil. Man is then tested by God during his life. Some people will choose good and will be rewarded, others will choose evil and will be punished.

Eschatology (end times)

Judgment

Eternal punishment appears in the Last Judgment, which is a central doctrine in Islam. At the last day, the dead will be raised to face judgment where Allah is the judge.

Hell is mentioned 146 times in the Qur'an but only nine refer to moral failings; the rest involve eternal torture for disagreeing with Muhammad. Thus 94% of the references to hell are about judgment for kafirs.

The wicked are tormented in hell-fire (*Jahannam*; cf. Hebrew 'Gehenna'). Hell is divided into seven storeys one below another, for different classes of the wicked.

- *Jahannam*, for those who acknowledged one God, i.e. wicked Muslims; who, after having been punished for their demerits, will be released.
- *Ladha*, for Jews.
- *Hotama*, for Christians.
- *al Sair*, for Sabians.
- *Sakar*, for Magians.
- *al Jahin*, for idolaters.
- *al Hawyat*, for hypocrites, or those who outwardly professed some religion.

Over each of these sections there will be a guard of 19 angels to whom the damned will confess the just judgment of God. There are degrees of suffering according to evil deeds in life.

Heaven

For the good, the end is a 'Day of Resurrection', when the sensual pleasures of the Garden of Paradise (*Jannat*) are rewarded to the righteous. Paradise is a fabulous place of stones being pearls and gems, walls of gold and silver, trees of gold, trees laden with multiple fruit varieties and various tastes, and rivers flowing with water, milk, wine, honey; and so forth. Most notable are beautiful girls with large black eyes, free from all impurity and living in pavilions of large pearls.

The basis of judgment is the balance of good versus evil works performed in this life. Islam is thus a meritorious salvation.

Fatalism

Fate is an ancient Arabic belief that found its way into the Qur'an and developed eventually into a form of predestination. Ancient Arabic fate originally determined a child's sex, whether it would be happy or not, what food it would have and how long it would live.

Predestination occurs in the Qur'an (e.g. 6.2; 9.51). Despite this, the Qur'an states that each person is responsible for their actions. Later theologians struggled to correlate these views.

Jews

When it became apparent that certain sections of the Qur'an disagreed with OT records, such as regarding Noah etc., Muhammad was forced to affirm that the Jews had corrupted their scriptures.⁵¹ From this time his strictures against Jews began.

To be accepted as a dhimmi Jew in Islam, a Jew must believe that Muhammad was the last of the Jewish prophets; otherwise they are to be killed.

The Apostle of Allah said, 'Kill any Jew who falls into your power'.⁵²

Torture the Jew until you extract what he has.⁵³

Both Jews and Christians are to be oppressed:

War on those who have received the Scriptures [Jews and Christians] but do not believe in Allah or in the Last Day. They do not forbid what Allah and his messenger have forbidden. The Christians and Jews do not follow the religion of truth until they submit and pay the poll tax [jizya] and they are humiliated.

Qur'an 9.29.

Alternative translation:

Fight those who believe not in Allah nor the Last Day, nor hold that forbidden which has been forbidden by Allah and his Prophet, nor acknowledge the religion of truth (even if they are) of the People of the Book, until they pay the jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued.

There are multiple verses against Jews, whom Muhammad called 'apes' or 'monkeys';⁵⁴ some are odd, such as:

Muhammad: 'If it weren't for the Jews, meat would not rot'.⁵⁵

See later on Jews in Islamic history.

Christians

Background

How much contact Muhammad had with Christians is hard to say. Monophysite Christianity was widely spread in the Arab kingdom of Ghassan. Representatives of the Byzantine Church were found as hermits in the Hijaz. Nestorians were established at Hira and in Persia. Muhammad was much more familiar with Jews in Medina and elsewhere. There was a heretical Christian sect called the Collyridians who worshipped the Virgin Mary, which may be where Muhammad got his false views of the Trinity from; others think that he may have been influenced by Gnostics in his denial of the crucifixion. However, it is likely that he reacted to a Monophysite⁵⁶ rather than a Nestorian theology.⁵⁷

⁵¹ E.g. Qur'an 2.70-71, 169; 3.72; 4.48; 5.16, 45; 6.91.

⁵² Ishaq 554.

⁵³ Ishaq 764.

⁵⁴ E.g. Qur'an 2.65.

⁵⁵ Bukhari 4. 55. 547.

⁵⁶ Monophysitism: the denial that Christ had two distinct natures; instead they claim he had one composite nature.

⁵⁷ Nestorianism: the Christian doctrine that there were two separate persons, one human and one divine, in the incarnate Christ. It is named after Nestorius, patriarch of Constantinople (428-31), and was maintained by some ancient Churches of the Middle East. The orthodox position is that Christ has two natures (divine and human) but one person.

The Qur'an does not mention Christians much and they had little place in the life of Muhammad, but he did plan to conquer Christians in Syria before he died. After Muhammad's death Islam wreaked havoc on Christian nations as it advanced through North Africa, Egypt, Anatolia and Eastern Europe. Whole Christian civilisations, millennia old, were destroyed and are now Muslim.

Islamic dualism is again seen in that initially Christians were seen as brothers following the same book (OT), then Christians were viewed as kafirs that needed to submit to Islam or die. Also the Qur'an teaches that the Gospels are true, but are also corrupt.

Muslims consider Christians to be polytheists since they believe in the Trinity. To pray with a Christian would send a Muslim to hell and this sin is called '*Shirk*'.

However, in seeking to advance Islam in a Christian culture, Muslim leaders will often say that Christians and Muslims worship the same God (not true) and that Muslims honour Jesus – but as a prophet and not as the Son of God (see 'Jesus'). This is part of the deception that Muslims are allowed to use to advance jihad. The Arabic word for Jesus is 'Isa'.

Women (see 'ethics')

In Islam men and women are supposed to be equal in terms of spiritual matters. However, the Qur'an and Islamic law, as well as custom, place men above women. There is one set of rules for men and another for women. Thus the higher percentage of inheritance goes to male heirs. Restrictions on women and separation from men varies from country to country. The seclusion of women in certain countries is seen as oppressive by many modern Muslims; others see it as respectful.

Radical Salafists demand very restrictive practices for women and enforce punishments for violations.

The status of women is recorded in the Hadith. It gives women a high status in only 0.6% of verses (as mothers). It gives women an equal status with men in only 10%. It gives women a low status in 89% of the Hadith.

Veils

The Qur'an demands modesty of dress and behaviour for men and women, however, it does not command the veiling of women.

The variations of covering (from a scarf to complete covering) are not explicitly demanded by the Qur'an.

Dualism

Finally, we must mention the incipient dualism within Islam and the character of Muhammad, which we will draw out within these pages. Some examples of this are:

- The political dualism is between Islam and kafirs.
 - Duality within Islam is between male and female.
 - There are two Qur'ans: the first were the suras written in Mecca, the second are the suras written in Medina.
 - Initially Islam was a religion of peace and developed in an area of religious toleration at Mecca. Later, after Medina, Islam became an intolerant religion of hatred and violence demanding killing or capturing all non-Muslims.
-

- Initially Islam was a spiritual force, a new religion based upon old ideas. After the Hejira, Islam became a political movement.
- Muhammad demonstrates dualism in his life history; early on he was a religious prophet and evangelist, later he became a bloodthirsty warrior-ruler.
- Muhammad initially considered Jews as brothers, developed doctrines from Jewish history and Scriptures and said that Jews and Christians were ‘people of the book (the OT)’. After being rejected as a prophet, he then came to hate Jews and Christians and advocated killing them. After initially treating Jews as brothers in the Qur’an, later chapters call them rats and apes.
- Muhammad said that women can be beaten by men and wives are subject to husbands; yet in another place he said don’t beat Allah’s handmaidens.
- Homosexuality is condemned as a capital crime and yet there are passages which imply that sex with young boys is acceptable and is a pleasure in heaven.

Almost every aspect of Islam has a dualistic character, which we will discuss as they arise.

Religious practices

These practices are prescribed in the Qur’an but not in any detail. They came to be regulated in the first three centuries of Islamic law. The exact manner of practice varies between Sunnis and Shi’ites; and also between the four Sunni legal schools (Shafi’ites, Hanafites, Malikites, and Hanbalites).

Since the Muslim calendar is lunar, annual dates for practices, notably Ramadan, vary each year.⁵⁸

The Shahada

The profession is, ‘*There is no god but god, and Muhammad is the Prophet of god*’. These statements occur in the Qur’an but not together. The term used for god is ‘Allah’, which is the Arabic proper name for God used by Christians and Jews as well as Muslims.

It is the second clause which distinguishes Muslims, an affirmation that Muhammad is the last and greatest prophet of God.

The Salat (‘worship’)

This is the daily prayer ritual. It was originally only performed twice a day by Muhammad (sunrise and sunset, see Qur’an 11.114, 17.78-79, 20.130 etc.). Bowing and prostration are mentioned in the Qur’an, but not as a ritual.

In the Medina ritual it was prescribed for all Muslims and extended to three times a day (‘the middle salat’, Qur’an 2.238-239). Then the Friday noon worship service was also instituted by Muhammad at Medina.

Only after Muhammad died, within a century, was the number of daily salats increased to five. Then a number of hadiths arose to support this number.

For over a year after the Hejira, Muslims faced Jerusalem during prayer. At the time of the ‘break with the Jews’ the direction of prayer (*qibla*) was changed to Mecca.

⁵⁸ The lunar year is only 354 days.

The time for prayer, and the call to attend the mosque on Fridays, is announced by an official of the mosque called the *muezzin* ('caller'). This call is seven short statements, some repeated. There are slight differences between Sunnis and Shi'ites. Ablutions are required to ensure purity before prayer. The exact performance of the salat varies among the different legal schools, but there is general agreement to thirteen essentials: six utterances, six actions or positions (standing, kneeling, prostration, sitting) and each done in the right order. Describing this complex process is not necessary here but it can be seen in Hinnells, pages 138-143.

The Friday service in the mosque is called 'the assembly' (*al-jum'a*). Mosques are unlike synagogues or church buildings. They comprise a minaret (tower), a niche indicating the direction of Mecca, a pulpit with an ornate staircase for sermons, and a fountain or water source for ablutions. Important officials are the leader (imam) of the salat, the preacher (*khatib*) and the muezzin who calls to prayer. In smaller mosques some of these functions are combined; in larger mosques there may be several imams and muezzins.

The Friday service includes: a sermon and a special salat. Individual prayers are performed before the service begins. Worshippers perform ablutions, wear perfume, arrive early and recited from the Qur'an.

Alms giving

Before the Hejira charitable acts were regarded as form of piety. After the Hejira the small Muslim community needed support from the new converts in Medina and alms-giving acquired a new significance.

The Qur'an stipulates giving of whatever is surplus to your requirements. Over time this was interpreted differently and a minimum amount (*nisab*) was set for each type of property (such as 5% of agricultural produce or 2.5% of money). The formal term *zakat* was used for alms, which then became a tax of wealth, produce, precious metals, merchandise and livestock. The zakat system varies in geographical areas and legal schools. In modern Muslim states it is usually replaced by national taxation and welfare systems (except Saudi Arabia and Libya).

Normal alms-giving is now a voluntary practice at a local level, sometimes collected and distributed by the state (e.g. Egypt).

Fasting

In the first year of the Hejira Muhammad instituted a one-day, 24-hour fast (the *Ashura*, 'tenth'). This was based upon the Jewish Day of Atonement on the tenth day of Tishri. This is not mentioned in the Qur'an but it is in the Hadith.

The thirty-day daytime-only fast of Ramadan was related to the battle of Badr in Ramadan in 624. In this fast the Qur'an is recited daily. Qur'an 2.187 relaxed fasting regulations given earlier (2.183-186). Later Islamic law stipulated that it must be kept from just before sunrise to just after sunset.

Violations vary in different legal schools. Violations are usually divided into these categories:

- Allowing food, beverages or anything swallowed intentionally. This includes inhaling tobacco.
- Intentional vomiting, even when ordered by a doctor.
- Sexual intercourse.
- Emission of semen caused by sexual contact.

There are also various voluntary fasts.

The pilgrimage (Hajj)

This is a journey to visit the sacred monuments in and near Mecca to be performed at least once in a lifetime. This occurs on certain days of the month Dhu-l-Hijja. Ritual ablutions and a special salat must be performed before entering the sacred territory around Mecca.

There is a lesser pilgrimage (*umra*) that can be performed anytime.

Islamic law stipulates three methods of performing these two pilgrimages combining both a visitation, enjoyment of Mecca and the Hajj proper. There are various laws on the actions to be performed in these, including running, walking, standing, visiting certain places, assemblies, recitations, having hair cut, sermons, sacrifices, throwing stones etc. The ceremonies date back to pre-Islamic paganism in Arabia.⁵⁹

Personal issues

Muslims must copy Muhammad in everything they do; he is the perfect model for Muslim behaviour. Thus hadiths give instructions about every detail of life, even how to go to the toilet. For example:

- Get dressed from the right side first. [Bukhari 7.65.292; Muslim 24.5231.]
- Do not eat or drink while standing. [Muslim 23.5018.]
- Drink in three gulps. [Muslim 23.5029.]
- After eating, do not clean hands until they are licked clean, either by themselves or someone else. [Muslim 23.5037.]
- Garments without an opening for the arms are forbidden. [Muslim 24.5234.]
- Do not lie down with one foot placed on top of the other. [Muslim 24.5238.]

Other practices

The Qur'an gives instructions regarding feasts, marriage, divorce, inheritance, circumcision and food laws. There are prohibitions of usury, gambling, drinking wine, eating pork etc. [See 'Ethics' later.]

Customs regarding ceremonies of marriage, circumcision and funerals vary in different countries.

| Changes to practices | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| <i>Prayer</i> | Prayers originally twice a day by Muhammad. Then three times a day. Only after Muhammad's death was the number increased to five. |
| <i>Friday worship</i> | Friday noon worship service added after the Hejira. |
| <i>Direction of prayer ('Kiblah')</i> | After the Hejira Muslims faced Jerusalem to pray (Qur'an 2:150). Then the direction was changed to face Mecca (Qur'an 2:125); after the Jews refused to follow Muhammad in Medina. Ishaq 381. NB. Translations obscure this. |
| <i>Alms</i> | In the Qur'an alms-giving is of a surplus to requirements. After the Hejira alms-giving is formalised, but varies in time periods and legal schools, as a form of taxation. |
| <i>Ramadan</i> | Ramadan did not appear until 624. |
| <i>Fasting</i> | Fasting regulations were relaxed by later Qur'an verses from earlier ones. |

⁵⁹ Such as head shaving and cutting nails at the end of pilgrimage then burying the hair and nail clippings in sacred soil to prevent attack from jinns. This is early Arabic animism.

Islamic ethics

In general westerners would aver that Muslim culture and laws are regressive; in some respects they are brutal and primitive.

Islam does not have a concept of absolute righteousness, or even right and wrong; rather it teaches what is permitted and what is forbidden. What is permitted is what Muhammad did.

Dualism

[See 'Dualism' earlier in religious teachings, and 'dualism' in the section in politics.]

Regarding ethics, Islamic dualism means that there is one set of ethics for Muslims and another for kafirs. Since this is fundamental there is no way for humanitarian reform within Islam. Thus there is no provision for integrity in Islam; in fact integrity is not possible in a dualistic system that is inherently prejudiced, intolerant, xenophobic and bigoted.

There is even dualism in fine details; kafirs, for example, may be treated well as a slave or violently killed; both of these are true Islam.

There is no pacifism within Islam; it is a religion of violence and a civilisation of war. In fact, until Islam took on its violent character it was a failure as a religious sect.⁶⁰ The basis of Islam is submission to Allah; thus all Muslim activity is devoted to bringing about this submission, mostly by violent means. Kafirs offend Allah by their rejection of him; thus to a Muslim jihad is defensive – inflicting divine judgment on the unbeliever. Thus the world is divided into the *dar al Islam* ('land of submission') and the *dar al harb* ('land of war', the area of the kafir).

Anger

Islamic apologists are often angry; one sees repeated images of a religious leader shouting invectives and deeply angry. This is normal Muslim behaviour because Muhammad was easily angered; the Sira and the Hadith mention this many times. Angry Muslim clerics are simply following Muhammad.

Marriage

All Muslim men must marry and Muhammad commanded them to have many children to outnumber their enemies. Men can have four wives⁶¹ but can co-habit with as many slave concubines as he likes. Multiple wives must be treated equally. A man can marry a Jewess or a Christian girl (but not a polytheist), who can continue to practise their religion privately, but they have no inheritance rights. Muslim girls can only be given to Muslim men.

Shi'ites also allow temporary marriage, based partly upon Qur'an 4.28 (over and above four wives). Sunnis deny this interpretation. However, though Muhammad allowed this it was first formally forbidden by Umar.

⁶⁰ In the first 12-13 years Muhammad only succeed in converting his immediate family and a few friends. Only when Islam became violent and raids could steal other's property did Islam gain many followers.

⁶¹ Qur'an 4.3.

Divorce is allowed for any reason, becoming irrevocable after a man saying the word words of divorce three times. Infant children stay with the mother and must be supported by the ex-husband until a certain age, disputed in various schools, usually between seven and eleven. After this the husband has absolute claim on the children; this causes much suffering to women. In this way Muslim men marry a young girl who bears several children and ages prematurely. She is then divorced and the man marries another adolescent.

Women cannot divorce their husbands.

Women

Islam is misogynistic, pure and simple. This is undeniable. It is clearly evidenced in Islamic societies throughout history and today, but the Qur'an and Sunna demonstrate this and it is especially observed in Sharia Law. [Note the laws mentioned later in this paper.] The Qur'an has whole sections devoted to demonstrate that women are inferior to men, although it also proclaims that women are honoured by the restrictions placed upon them.

Facts

- Qur'an 4:24 allows rape and prostitution.
- Qur'an 4:34 allows beating a wife if she does not obey her husband.⁶² Women that have lived in Muslim states with Sharia Law have stated that many women have bruised faces under their burkas. A survey in a Pakistani Institute of Medical Science reported that 90% of women interviewed had been beaten by their husbands.⁶³ In Britain, Social Services do not report beatings inside Muslim families. Beating of women is not prosecuted by the police for fear of being racist.
- Muhammad beat his wife Ayesha.⁶⁴
- In the Hadith Muhammad says that wives should be beaten lightly but not on the face. There is no instruction about what 'lightly' means; Muslim men often use sticks. With typical Islamic dualism, there is also another hadith where Muhammad says not to beat a wife. However, the number affirming beating and subjection far outweigh forbidding beating.
- Sharia Law gives instructions for subjugating wives and the final stage is beating them, but not on the face.⁶⁵
- Qur'an 65:4 allows paedophilia of young girls.
- Female genital mutilation is commanded in the Hadith.
- Women are only worth a half a man: her testimony in court and her inheritance rights are 50% the value of a man's.⁶⁶ It thus becomes impossible for a woman to prove allegations of rape without other witnesses.
- In a hadith Muhammad says that women were spiritually inferior to men and were not as intelligent.⁶⁷
- A hadith compares women to camels.⁶⁸
- Men can have four wives but wives cannot have four husbands.

⁶² 'As to those women on whose part you fear disloyalty and ill-conduct, admonish them (first), (next) refuse to share their beds, (and last) chastise them lightly.'

⁶³ Warner; Political Islam, vol. 1, p42.

⁶⁴ Muslim, 004.2127.

⁶⁵ See Abu Dawud, 11.2137.

⁶⁶ Qur'an 4:11.

⁶⁷ Bukhari, 1.2.28.

⁶⁸ Abu Dawud, 11.2155.

- Women are an affliction to men.⁶⁹
- There are also multiple strict regulations for women, such as not driving a car under Shari'a law.
- In other places in the Qur'an women are said to be equal with men, but this is on Judgment Day. Women will face equal punishment with men. Muhammad said that he had seen Hell and that the majority of its occupants were women, who had not properly submitted to their husbands.⁷⁰
- In Paradise women do not seem to be equal. For men, this is a place of sexual fulfilment; men have multiple women to consort with. It does not seem that women have similar freedom.
- When men pray facing Mecca, women must pray standing behind the men.
- A man's prayer can be negated if a dog, a donkey or a woman walks in front of them. Thus a woman is equal to a dog.

Muslim societies that use Shari'a Law without western cultural influences, such as Saudi Arabia or the Gulf States, regularly flog and execute women for trifling or unproved transgressions, such as driving a car, speaking to a stranger or dressing improperly.

As I write, a young English woman is in prison in Dubai; her crime was to report that two men had raped her. She is charged with fornication outside of marriage and could face a flogging, imprisonment or death by stoning. She is not the first person to suffer this fate.

Veils and coverings

As we have noted, the Qur'an does not describe the veiling of a woman, still less the complete covering of one; it merely demands modesty. Muhammad made his wives wear a veil⁷¹ and this has led to the demand for a full covering.

There are multiple types of veiling and coverings in use:

- Al-Amira: a light, tube-like, scarf to cover the head over a close-fitting cap; the face is visible.
- Shayla: A long, rectangular scarf popular in the Gulf area, wrapped around the head and shoulders; the face is visible.
- Khimar: a long, cape-like veil that hangs down to the waist area. The face is clear.
- Chador: a full-body cloak. Sometimes with a headscarf underneath. Often worn in Iran. The face is visible.
- Hijab: a scarf covering head & neck; the face is visible.
- Niqab: covering for the face except the eyes, as well as shoulders.
- Burka: a complete covering from head to toe with a small two-inch gap for vision or even with the eye-slit veiled.
- In western nations some Muslim women just wear a headscarf on their head but not their face. This is not Islamic and is against Sharia Law.

In Mecca a girl's school caught on fire. The girls tried to escape but were driven back into the fire because they were not wearing a full-body covering. It was considered better that they burned rather than be exposed without a burka.⁷²

⁶⁹ Bukhari, 4.52.111.

⁷⁰ Bukhari, 1.4.184.

⁷¹ Bukhari, 1.8.305; 1.4.148.

Extreme examples

Sadly, history and even current events prove that women are often treated as little less than slaves by Muslim men. Muslim women that have escaped Islamic societies and spoken up have even said that women are just pieces of furniture.

Here are some examples of the treatment of women.

- Young girls have been killed for trying to attend school.
- Daughters have been repeatedly raped by fathers.
- Honour killings⁷³ are rife in certain countries like Pakistan or Saudi Arabia. Islam does not directly support this doctrinally; it merely says that disobedient women can be beaten. However, there is a hadith about a man killing his father who was a kafir at the Battle of Badr who comforted himself that it was better that his father was dead since he was a kafir. Many Muslims today thus advocate that it is Sunna ('the way') to kill a family member as part of jihad.
- Recently a woman was ravaged and beaten by a mob for alleged denunciation of the Qur'an with no trial. She was mercilessly attacked and then run over by a car which dragged her for 300 metres. She was then hung up and beaten (though dead) and finally thrown in a river. All of this was filmed. It was later found that she was innocent.
- Women are raped without mercy, often gang-banged, sometimes to death. Videos of men boasting about doing this are available.
- In 2008 two sisters, Zohre and Azar Kabiri were videotaped talking to men without adult family members with them in Iran. They were convicted of adultery. First they were flogged with 99 lashings each; then they were sentenced to be stoned.⁷⁴
- Kafir women are considered as materialistic objects to be abused by Muslim men.
- Women are beheaded for trivial offences in Saudi Arabia, the Gulf States, Afghanistan and under IS rule.
- In Pakistan, women regularly have acid thrown in their face for not wearing a veil. The police do not investigate these cases because they are Muslim.
- Women are regularly stoned for alleged adultery in Arab states.

Paedophilia

I have already shown that the Qur'an allows for sexual abuse of young girls and my later life of Muhammad shows how he consummated a marriage with a girl (Ayesha) aged 9 when in his mid-fifties. Thus there are religious texts and historical precedent for paedophilia. This is normal Islam; it is Sunna ('the way').

In 2002 researchers in Afghanistan and Pakistan found that half the girls surveyed were married by the age of 13. In some areas two-thirds of young girls at school were married. In one case a ten-year old girl was engaged to a man aged 60. 57% of Afghan girls under 16, some as young as 9, were in arranged marriages.⁷⁵

⁷² Warner; Political Islam, Vol 1, p45.

⁷³ Where daughters are killed by parents for becoming a Christian, apostatising, dressing or acting improperly or marrying an infidel.

⁷⁴ Iran Human Rights, 5 February 2008.

⁷⁵ Warner, Political Islam, Vol 1, p43.

This very day the BBC is reporting that Islamic clerics in British towns are teaching Muslim teenagers that Islam allows for them to have sex-slaves.⁷⁶

The massive sexual abuse of minor's scandal in Rotherham (UK), and nearby areas, by Muslim men went on for years, despite being widely known, because the council, the Social Services and the police were afraid of charges of racism. Hundreds of children were sexually abused because the authorities feared Islam. This lack of action has been evidenced in multiple western nations. Recent exposés show that the abuse in Rotherham is still going on because the authorities fear Islam. Those sentenced by the court shouted '*Allahu Ackba*' defiantly.

Sexual ethics

Although homosexuality, especially by paedophiles, has been rampant in Arabic culture,⁷⁷ Islam condemns it outright. Guilty homosexuals are to be stoned, thrown off a cliff or a high place. In some modern Islamic societies they have been dropped from a tall crane; in others they have been burned.

Yet while forbidding adult homosexual activity, the Qur'an suggests that homosexual paedophile behaviour is acceptable (Qur'an 52:24; 56:17; 76:19) even suggesting that in heaven young boys will be available for pleasure, '*youths of perpetual freshness ... like pearls*'. This is typical Islamic dualism.

Slavery

Muhammad was a slave trader and slavery is sanctioned within Islam, as well a sex-slave concubines. Even captured married women (normally exempt from sex-slavery) can be sex-slaves and concubines.⁷⁸

Sex-slaves are the very worst aspect of Islam and incredible suffering throughout history has been inflicted upon the women of conquered nations. A sex-slave concubine is used by a Muslim master as he pleases to gratify himself, in any manner, until he is tired of her and sells her to another, creating a wreck of a woman.

In general, ordinary slaves are to be treated well and the Qur'an extols kindness to slaves, while Muhammad himself was kind to his slaves.

Magic

We have seen that Muhammad believed in magic, spells and the evil-eye. The average Muslim firmly believes that man can utilise the power of demons (jinn) by means of magic and uses 'counter-magic' to ward off evil.

Magic amulets are worn by people and even animals. Magic cups are made at Medina for healing and other things. Sacrifices are made for newborn children involving spells.

Such magic practices arise from pre-Islamic Arabia and from conquered lands.

⁷⁶ BBC News, 5 January 2017.

⁷⁷ Authors have quoted a Turkish, Iraqi, Egyptian and Arab proverb, '*a woman for duty, a young boy for pleasure, but a melon for ecstasy*' [i.e. slaking of thirst]. 'A melon for ecstasy' was also the title of a 1971 novel by John Fortune and John Wells. Homosexuality amongst the Persian Gulf Arabs has been proverbial. British soldiers were warned about this before deployment to the first Gulf War. An Iraqi man told an American Marine that '*women are for breeding, men are for sex*'. Similar quotes have been reported many times. Soldiers in Afghanistan reported that army commanders in the Afghan National Army would sodomise subordinates for infractions of duty and offered them to NATO officers.

⁷⁸ Qur'an 4.24.

General practices

See Sharia law later.

- Alcohol is forbidden.
- Eating pork or blood is forbidden.
- Gambling is forbidden.
- Usury is forbidden.
- Circumcision is recommended, but it usually treated as essential today.
- A thief should have his right hand cut off.
- Adulterers are to be punished by stoning. In common practice, a man can kill his wife for adultery.
- Fornicators should be beaten.

Deception

Muhammad cried out, 'Jihad is deceit'.

Bukhari, 4.52.267.

If deception advances Islam it is part of jihad and fully acceptable.⁷⁹ This lying is called *taqiyya*. Thus Muslims regularly lie in their defences of Islam in order to gain more footing within society. When Muslims gain positions of power the question of deception becomes very real and worrying. Muslims are even allowed to deny that they are Muslims to avoid punishment or to help jihad.⁸⁰ Thus oaths by Muslims to support a democratic constitution or an oath of office cannot be trusted at all.⁸¹

Muslims, however, must not lie to other Muslims; more examples of dualism. Confusingly, Muhammad did allow Muslims to lie to each other if it promoted brotherhood or healed rifts.

Lying by omission is called *kitman*; not telling the whole truth. When a Muslim states that jihad is not violent struggle but the inner struggle for purity, that is *kitman*. In the Hadith the inner struggle comprise only 3% of the doctrine, 97% is about violent struggle.

Note the origin of the lies that Islam is a religion of peace, or that jihad is not real Islam, or that ISIS is not normal Islam – Muslims.

Shari'a law

Also 'shariah' or 'shariat'; from Arabic *šarī'a*; the variant *shariat* from Urdu and Persian. The word originally meant 'the way to the watering place'. Though Islam has its theology, this is not very explicit about the being of God and fine issues. What has more priority for Muslims is Islamic law; this is the centre of Islam.

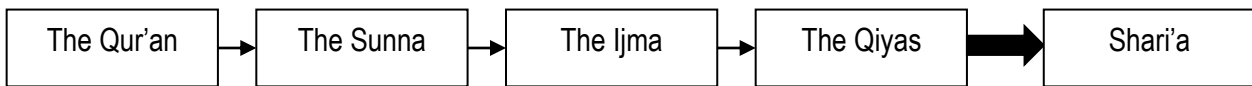
Shari'a is Islamic canonical law based on the teachings of the Qur'an and the traditions of the Prophet (Hadith and Sunna), prescribing both religious and secular duties and sometimes retributive penalties for lawbreaking. Though some rules emanate from the Qur'an, the greater part of Shari'a derives from the life of Muhammad; his example is the chief feature of Islamic law, which became the core of Islamic education. In addition there

⁷⁹ Bukhari 5.59.369; 9.84.64. Muslim 032.6303.

⁸⁰ Qur'an 16.106.

⁸¹ This also applies to Jews who are allowed to deceive Gentiles and Freemasons who must put fellow Masons first. Since the British judiciary, police, legal system, education system and media are filled with Jews, Muslims and Freemasons what chance for justice?

is the consensus of the Muslim community or of its leading scholars (*Ijma*), plus analogical deductions from the first three sources (*Qiyas*). In summary:



The basic materials of Shari'a have been shown to be drawn from pre-Islamic customary laws or even foreign influences, systematised by Islamic scholars and lawyers.

It has generally been supplemented by legislation adapted to the conditions of the day, though the manner in which it should be applied in modern states is a subject of dispute between Islamic fundamentalists and modernists. Generations of scholars elaborated and developed the laws; this is enabled by the acceptance of analogical deductions.

Laws

The laws (*ahkam* – commandments) are broken down into:

- What God commands (*fard* – compulsory).
- What God recommends (*mustahabb* – recommended).
- Things indifferent (*halal* – allowed).
- What God dislikes but has not prohibited (*makruh* – disliked).
- What God forbids (*haram* - forbidden).

Thus laws cover all aspects of life, far more so than western legal systems. In practice official courts have alleviated the inconvenience of Shari'a precepts through certain devices. Rulers found proof to be difficult to determine; merchants found prohibitions too restrictive for business and local communities found them too rigid for local customs.

After the split of Islam into Sunnis, Shi'ites and Kharijites, plus further sub-divisions of sub-sects and schools, the right of independent deduction was replaced by a duty to follow the authority of past jurists (*taqlid*). Only in Isma'ili Shi'ias can an imam give a wholly authoritative ruling.

Laws include the following (there are many more):

- Eating of pork forbidden. Eating meat must be from animals sacrificed to Allah ('halal' meat, i.e. blood drained from the throat and blessed).
- Alcohol forbidden.
- Muslims must lie to non-Muslims to advance Islam (*Taqiyya*).
- Theft is punishable by amputation of the right hand.
- The penalty of criticising the Qur'an, Allah or Muhammad is death.
- Apostasy means death.
- A non-Muslim who successfully proselytises a Muslim must be killed.
- A non-Muslim who marries a Muslim woman should be killed.
- A man can consummate a marriage when the wife is only 9-years old.
- FGM⁸² is commanded by Muhammad (Book 41, Kitab Al-Adab, Hadith 5251).
- A woman can only have one husband but a man can have 4 wives (Muhammad had more).
- A husband can beat his wife for insubordination.

⁸² Female genital mutilation (cutting off the clitoris).

- A man can unilaterally divorce his wife but a wife needs her husband's consent to divorce.
- A divorced wife loses custody of all children over 6-years old.
- Testimony from four male witnesses are required to prove charges of rape against a woman.
- A woman who has been raped cannot testify in court against her rapists.
- A woman's testimony in court regarding property cases carries 1/2 the weight of a man's.
- A female heir inherits half of what a male heir inherits.
- A woman cannot drive a car as it leads to *fitnah* ('upheaval').
- A woman cannot speak alone to a man who is not her husband or relative.

It should be noted that such laws cannot be sustained in a western, liberal democracy.

The weakness of Sharia is that it lacks rules to govern modern political and economic organisations. Civil law began to change with the impact of modernism from the Ottoman and then the British Empire. Thus Libya and Iran both incorporated legal systems copied from the West, for example.

The Ottomans replaced Shari'a law with various codes and systems that were based upon French models. Necessity also influenced the Ottomans to introduce a Law of Family Rights in 1917, enabling dissolution of marriages. In India Muslims adopted secular codes that were based upon English Common Law. In modern Turkey Shari'a was originally abolished and European codes introduced. Shari'a has always been dominant in Saudi Arabia, though even here there have been statutory regulations of necessity in a modern world. Some codes show a Marxist influence, such as in Yemen or Somalia. In countries where modern Islamic fundamentalism has taken hold, there has been a return to Shari'a law.

Achievements

Science and art

In the period of great Islamic philosophy between the 9th – 14th centuries, there was a growth in the arts and sciences as well; poets, musicians, astronomers and naturalists were abundant. These laid many of the foundations on which modern science was built.

This spurt of discovery did not emanate from Muhammad. His teaching actually discouraged discovery and inventiveness; Allah, for Muhammad, was unapproachable, therefore, his creation was impenetrable. It was Mahmud, the caliph of Baghdad from 813-833 who stimulated the arts and sciences as a result of the emphasis of Aristotelian reason.

Mahmud ordered that a great library be built, a 'house of wisdom' to collect the wisdom from all around the world. The works of Greek, Indian, and Persian writers were translated into Arabic, then this work was developed by Muslim scholars. This contrasts with later leaders who destroyed libraries. Even in this it was the dhimmis that often did the work; the dhimmis were the scholars, especially as the early Muslims were barely literate and their traditions transmitted orally. Secular knowledge within Islam came from Christians, Magians (Persians, Zoroastrians) and Jews. Most of the inventions of Muslims are really attributed to dhimmis, who took Arabic names, whether it be carpets or architecture.

The chief focus was understanding the natural laws of the universe, based upon Greek ideas. From Persian ideas, they discovered the circulation of the blood and were able to perform surgical operations under anaesthetic and to treat smallpox. From Indian philosophy Muslims developed mathematics, adopting the decimal system and the use of zero plus algebra. Islamic scholars also built on the work of Ptolemy and began studying the night sky, giving names to the zenith, nadir, and azimuth. Atlases of earth's geography were also drawn up. Essentially, the Arabs transmitted much of Aristotelian rationality to the west, resulting in the Renaissance.

This gathered learning was called Avicenna, after Ibn Sina, a great philosopher. Gradually this collected learning began to impact European countries, especially Spain. The lute, the guitar, trumpets and flutes, originated from Muslims in Spain (but the root origins of stringed and horn instruments go back in antiquity as the Bible explains). Absorbing many influences from the different cultures it conquered, Islam developed a distinctive architecture and decorative art, which is clearly seen in Spain (Cordoba, Granada) and other nations.

The development of the arts and sciences were stopped by the Mongol sack of Baghdad in 1258.

Mathematics

It is often affirmed that it was Arab Muslims that gave us modern mathematics and invented the zero. In fact, modern numerals are called 'Arabic numerals'. This is incorrect.

Though the Greeks were more interested in trigonometry and geometry, they contributed a huge amount to basic mathematics. But the concept of zero was first developed by Hindus in the north and also some native tribes in South America. The Muslims took their numbering system from the Hindus, whom they conquered.

Key religious sects

Islam has very many sects, some of which are violently opposed to each other [see the following diagram for a summary].

After the death of Muhammad different Islamic parties battled it out for dominance. This culminated in the work of al-Ash'ari (d. 935) and what became Sunni orthodoxy. The main areas of difference included: faith and works, predestination and free will, revelation and reason, the unity of God, the eternity and literal assent of the Qur'an.

The Kharijites

Lit. 'the seceders', who withdrew from the party of Ali as successors of Muhammad and later from the Umayyads. They claimed that leaders were not following the Qur'an strictly enough. Today these are a small sect in Africa (see 'history').

Murji'ites

Those who emphasised faith over works were called Murji'ites.

Qadarites (Qadaris)

Those who emphasised human responsibility over predestination were called Qadarites.

Hanbalites

Those who based their faith solely on the traditions (Hadith) and were suspicious of using reason to determine religious truth. They also argued for a literal interpretation of the Qur'an as the eternal word of God. They followed Ahmad bin Hanbal (d. 855).

The Mu'tazilites (Mu'tazila)

Or 'separatists', opposed the Hanbalites and argued for a balance of reason and revelation, though reason was prominent. They denied predestination, the eternity of the Qur'an and the literal interpretation of it.

These views were supported by the Caliph al-Ma'mun (d. 833), especially the 'createdness' of the Qur'an, and Hanbal was imprisoned but this was not widely popular (see 'philosophy' later). Gradually the sect drifted into obscurity.

Beginnings of Sunni Islam

It was al-Ash'ari (d. 935) who engineered a synthesis between the Traditionalist-literalist positions of the Hanbalites and the rational approach of the Mu'tazilites. He defended Hanbalite views but used the methods of the Mu'tazilites. His position came to be accepted as Sunni orthodoxy.

His basic assumptions are very negative in that they use reason and logic to demonstrate the barrenness of both. Philosophy cannot establish a chain of causation and therefore cannot help to define the attributes of God or the moral duties of man; man is thus dependent upon divine revelation. Some examples:

- The Qur'an is uncreated and the speech of God.
- The anthropomorphic statements about God in the Qur'an must be accepted but without asking 'how'.
- Eschatological descriptions in the Qur'an must be accepted but without asking 'how'.
- Predestination must be accepted as God's creation of the acts of a person, but the person acquires the acts and is responsible for deeds.
- Any idea of causation is rejected; but harmony in the world is the result of God's will, unaffected by laws. Connection in space and time is only apparent and in the mind of God and by the exercise of his creative power. There is no order in the universe. Human free will is but the presence of a choice created in man by God.

To summarise a complex metaphysics: there were no natural laws; no chain of causation; no dogmatic theology and no ethics except in the revealed will of God in the Qur'an and Hadith. It is a form of negative Greek atomic theory coupled with legalism.

Ash'ari's theology was virtually complete by the 10th century and codified by followers but was long opposed by the Hanbalis and the liberals. However, al-Ghazzali (died 1111) established the views of Ash'ari as the dominant school of Sunni orthodoxy.

Philosophy

The Mu'tazila were never popular with the masses and mostly regarded as heretics. When a caliph tried to enforce this position Hanbalism rose to prominence as a reaction and the Mu'tazila became more dogmatic and obscure. The next caliph reversed the position.

Thus the champions of reason became the philosophers who started as sincere Muslims but wholeheartedly supported Greek philosophy and tried to reconcile the Qur'an with Platonic and Aristotelian philosophy. Such men preserved the learning of ancient Greece.

The extreme representatives of the Greek rationalist position came to be called *falasifa*, 'philosophers. These differed from the theologians (*mutakallimum*) in affirming that reason and observation are the primary sources of truth.

Al-Kindi (d. 870) was the first major Arabic philosopher who adapted Greek thought and science to fit the Arab world. His views were close to the Mu'tazilites. Unlike later Islamic philosophers, he accepted creation ex nihilo. Most people don't realise that Islam today supports evolutionary theory.

The Turkish a-Farabi (d. 950) founded Arab Neoplatonism and is supported by the Shi'ites who like his political philosophy. Many westerners appreciate him as the most original Islamic philosopher.

The Andalusian philosopher/physicist/scientist Ibn Rushd (d. 1198), known in the west as Averroes, made the biggest impact on European thought and influenced the Catholic scholastics. He wrote many commentaries on Aristotle.

The greatest philosopher writing in Arabic is the Persian born Ibn-Sina (d. 1037), known in the west as Avicenna. He wrote a major work, the *Kitab al-Shifa* (book of healing) which is an encyclopaedia of 11th-century Greek and Islamic teaching dealing with logic, metaphysics, mathematics and science. As a Neo-Platonist he contributed to western philosophy for his synthesis of previous ideas.

Sunni Islam

Sunnis constitute 90% of Muslims today.

The central divide between Sunnis and Shi'as is who succeeded Muhammad. The Sunnis answer is that no one can succeed him since the Qur'an is finalised and perfected (though this was done after Muhammad's death by editors). His successor is only a guardian of the faith, a caliph with subordinate authority as leader of the believers. The consensus (*ijma*) of the community would select the caliph from male members of the Quraysh tribe. Initially these successors were

- Abu Bakr [632-634].
- 'Umar [634-644].
- 'Uthman [644-656].
- 'Ali [656-661].

The knowledge of these four who were so close to the Prophet that their example is taken to comprise the *sunna* ('custom') for later Muslims to follow.

Shari'a law developed (see 'Shari'a) provided cohesion while allowing variations for the four orthodox law schools:

- The Malikis (Hijaz): founded by Malik ibn Anas. Prevails in North and West Africa, Upper Egypt and the Sudan.
- Hanafis (Iraq): founded by Abu Hanifa. Prominent in old Ottoman Empire and Northern India. The most numerous school.
- Shafi'is: founded by al-Shafi.
- Hanbalis: named after the traditionalist Ahmad ibn Hanbal. Followed by Wahhabis in Saudi Arabia.

Consensus (essentially of Islamic lawyers) is central. The caliphate was regarded as the guardian of Shari'a.

Shi'a Islam

This faction is identified as 'the party of Ali' (*shi'at 'Ali*) the cousin and son-in-law of Muhammad. It began as a political movement supporting 'Ali. With the success of the Umayyads and the 'Abbasids, followed by the rise of Sunni Islam, the Shi'a became a separate religious community, centred in Iran.

They rejected religious consensus of authorities and accepted the idea of an infallible *imam* ('leader') for each generation; the principle religious authority is the imam. While divine revelation was completed with Muhammad, the imam is the continuing guidance of the community by infallible interpretation of the Qur'an. The first imam was Ali; he was infallible in his interpretations, inheriting Muhammad's abilities, and passed these on in divine succession.

When the 12th Imam disappeared in 878, the Imamate ended and the collective body of religious scholars (*ulema*) took over awaiting the imam's return as *al-Mahdi* (the 'rightly-guided one'). The current ayatullahs (or ayatollahs, 'signs of God') are caretakers of the office of imam.

The Shi'ites developed their own theology, commentaries, legal system and rituals, vehemently opposed by the majority Sunnis.

Twelvers (Imamis)

The majority of Shi'ites are called 'Twelvers' (see above).

Saidis (Zaydis)

Mostly found in Yemen today. These do not limit the number of imams to 12.

Sevensers (Isma'ilis)

The second largest group are called 'Sevensers' because they contend that the rightful seventh and last Imam was not Musa al-Kazim, but his elder brother Isma'il (Ishmael) who died as a child. They developed highly esoteric doctrines about the imam. This sect arose in the 9th century and are based upon Neoplatonism and Gnostic ideas.

The Aga Khan is a representative of this group. Offshoots of this group are the Druze, the Musta'lis, and the Nusayris (Nizaris).

The esoteric Druzes⁸³ meet on Thursdays instead of Friday, hold firmly to monogamous marriage, have strict ethics and various distinctive beliefs, such as that 'Ali was an incarnation of God plus Jewish ideas. They are found mostly in Lebanon and Syria.

The Hashshashin (Assassins)

These broke away from the Ishmaelis in Syria in the 11th century during the Crusades. They used Hashish to get high and attacked Crusader forts, assassinating Christians. Today they are known as the Khojas or Mawlas and live mostly in the Bombay area of India, but some are in Syria, Iran and Zanzibar.

Sufism

This is the mystical sect of Islam. The word derives from the word for the simple woollen garment (*suf*) worn by early ascetics.

Mystical Sufism arose in the early Islamic period as a reaction against the strict formality of orthodox teaching and the godless nature of many Umayyad and Abbasid caliphs. It was

⁸³ The plural of Druze is : Druze, Druzes or Druses.

organised into formal orders from the 12th century, being very influenced by the Greek Christian Church, and Neo-Platonism with Persian and Indian influences. It was originally an ascetic pietism emphasising love and pure devotion to God and through mysticism a Muslim could reconcile the crudities of the Qur'an with the abstractions of Greek philosophy. Many ordinary Muslims found Sufism warm and poetic as opposed to the negation and metaphysics of Ash'ari.

Sufism follows typical medieval mysticism: avoid the sensual world; develop the divine spark within; concentrate on God alone and thus receive enlightenment, especially through ecstasies, which were considered as unity with God.

Seeking personal union with God, Sufis avoid the formal rituals and orthodox learning of the *ulama* (the doctors of sacred law and theology) in favour of esoteric practices and teachings from sheikhs, whose personal powers equip them to set initiates on the path to communion with God (somewhat like Hindu gurus). Its stages of piety hark back to Gnostic mysticism and precede the 'ladder of perfection' of later Christian mystics; both resemble Hindu and Buddhist concepts. Thus its two foundations are *maqamat* (stages of piety, like western mystical ascent) and *ahwal* (mystical states of consciousness, like Hinduism).

Sufis have included outstanding poets, such as the Persian Rumi, scholars, such as al-Ghazzali, and large brotherhoods such as the Qadiriyya and Tijaniyya.

The central aim of Sufism is to know God directly through asceticism and meditation disciplines, such as *dhikr* (recitation) and *sama'* (dance; notably the 'Whirling Dervishes').⁸⁴ Unlike Islam in general it utilises music and singing in religious rituals.

Sufism has been influenced by the beliefs of other faiths, amongst them neo-Platonism and Buddhism, but is deeply rooted in Islamic spiritualism. Some Sufism degenerated into saint cults and superstition.

For centuries the orthodox treated Sufis with suspicion. Some degenerated into Pantheism, ritualism, super-spirituality and transcendentalism or even moral laxity. The famous al-Hallaj was executed in 902 for claiming, '*I am the truth*'. Only later with al-Ghazzali was Sufism given more acceptance.

Sober Sufism is represented in al-Junayd of Baghdad (d. 911). The most original thinker in all Islam is the Sufi al-Ghazzali, an Ash'arite theologian who reformed Sufism and brought about a revival of orthodox Islam, a synthesis of Sufism and Sunni Islam. He also synthesised theology and philosophy affecting the course of future developments of Islamic thought and attacked the earlier Neoplatonism while accepting some Aristotelianism.

Alawites

Aka Alawis; i.e. followers of Ali (Ali ibn Abi Talib).

A branch of Shi'a Islam based in Syria representing about 11% of the population. Though a minority, Alawites captured power through the Ba'ath Party and the army in Lebanon, Syria and Israel.

⁸⁴ Dervish = (from Persian, 'mendicant') a member of an ascetic or mystical order within Islam, emphasising the emotional, ecstatic, and monastic aspects of religious experience. Dervish practices include trance-inducing ecstatic dances (like those of the Mevlevi, or 'whirling dervishes' of Turkey).

The doctrines of this sect have historically been obscure, though they believe in a divine triad, three modes of God, which appear cyclically in human manifestation. They have been persecuted by Sunni Muslim rulers.

Baha'i

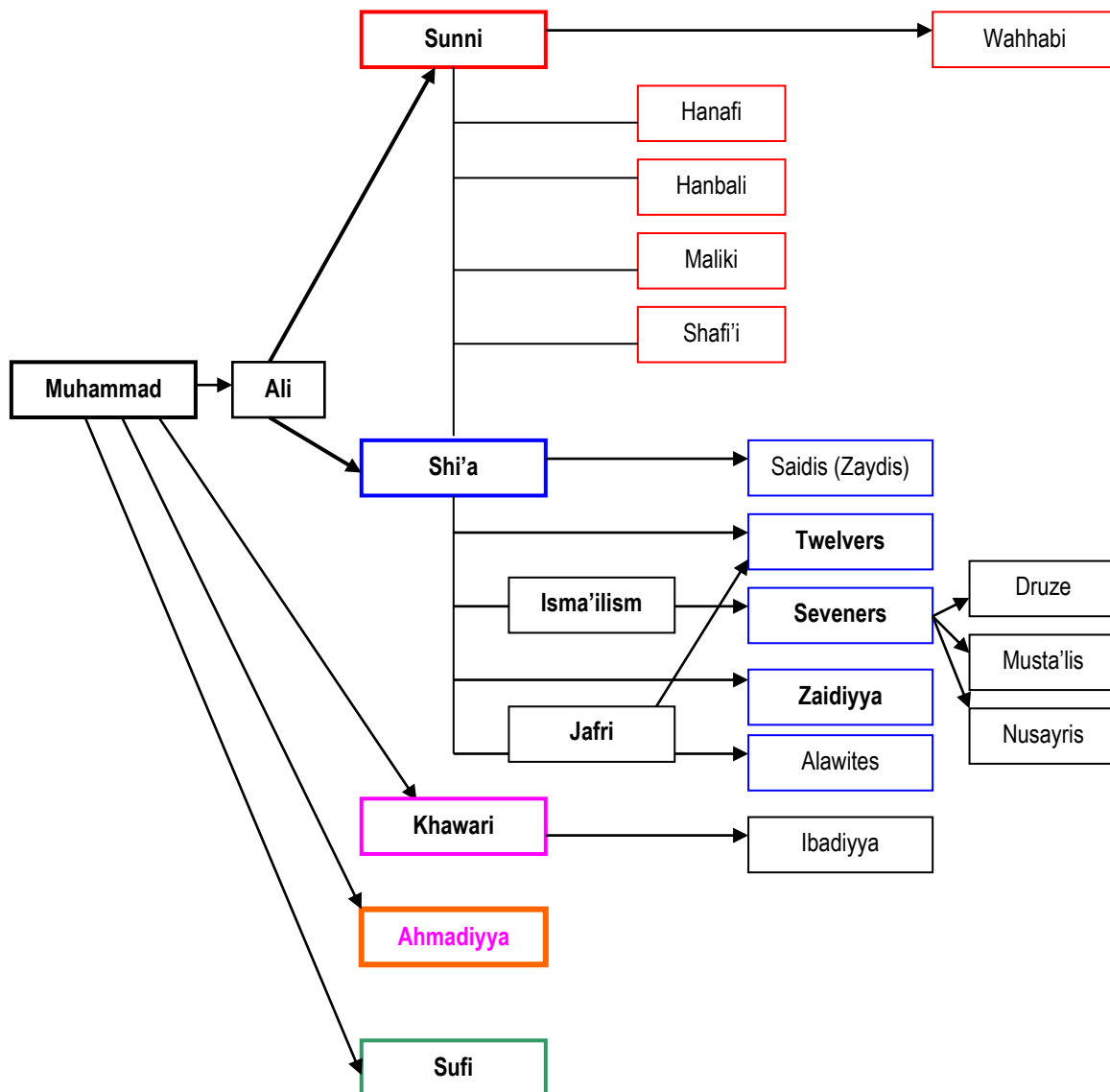
This is an offshoot from Islam which began in the mid-19th century. It believes in the universality of religions and is regarded as heretical by Muslims and is persecuted. It is really a new form of religion not a sect of Islam.

Others

There are many other smaller sects within Islam as well as various synthesised religions, notably Sikhism, which combines Islamic beliefs with Hinduism. Other sects developed very far from orthodox Islam, such as the Babis founded in 1840 in Iran (the precursor to Baha'i), the Ahmadiyyams founded in 1880s in India.

See 'History' for further information on the sects.

The main divisions of Islam (simplified)



Modern reform movements

There have been various reform movements to purify Islam in various parts of the world from the 19th century onwards (e.g. the Sanusi order, the Idrisi order), but evaluating all of them would be tedious. One needs special mention as it impacts us today.

Wahhabism

This is a branch of Sunni Islam. Adherents do not like the term and prefer Salafist. Salafist really refers to the general puritanical Muslim movement worldwide while Wahhabism refers to the fundamentalist movement in the Middle East.

It is a fundamentalist, ultraconservative, puritanical religious system. This sect is named after the 18th century founder Muhammad bin ‘Abd-al-Wahhab (d. 1792), who reformed Islam from foreign accretions affirming that Muslims must return to simple beliefs and practices that prevailed during Muhammad’s time. It is a militant, puritanical and fundamentalist sect which forms the government of Saudi Arabia.

It revived the conservative legal school of Hanbal, raising its influence. The group joined forces with the family of Sa’ud based in Riyadh, who captured and ‘purified’ Mecca in 1806, flourishing until defeated by the governor of Egypt, Muhammad ‘Ali in 1818.

The dynasty of bin Saud has been a long devotee of Wahhabism. At the beginning of the 20th century Su’udi (Saudi) power began to be restored in Central Arabia and the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia was established in 1932. The king formally sanctioned Wahhabi beliefs, influencing Sunnis worldwide.

Wahhabism is thus seen as the official form of Sunni Islam, at least in Saudi Arabia. However, Wahhabism actually covers only about 5-6 million people in the Persian Gulf as opposed to 935 million other Sunnis and 200 million Shiites.⁸⁵

Wahhabism has long been accused as a centre for terrorism throughout the world, ISIS is merely the current major factor in this. It is an active source of division within Islam since it accuses all other Muslims as being apostates (‘takfir’).

Beliefs include:

- Visiting the graves of saints is polytheism.
- They are opposed to celebrating the birthday of the Prophet.
- Allegorical interpretation of the Qur’an is forbidden.
- Knowledge is confined to the Qur’an, the canonical Hadith or strict reason.
- Western innovations (cinemas, tobacco, dancing) are forbidden.

[For more information on Wahhabism see my paper, ‘Syria: What is really going on’, appendix.]

The Tanzimat

This was a reform movement originating in the 19th-century Ottoman Empire.

⁸⁵ The population figures for Muslims vary enormously. There are probably between 1.1 and 1.8 billion globally.

In 1869 the Ottoman Midhat Pasha was appointed governor of Baghdad, who was very reform minded. He immediately began to modernise Iraq according to the western model. The primary objectives were:

- To reorganise the army.
- To create codes of criminal and commercial law.
- To secularise the education system.
- To improve provincial administration.
- To introduce new land laws to end the feudal system.

To do this he created representative assemblies in the provinces and set up municipal councils in urban areas. This created private property and capitalism, tying Iraq to western markets and altering the social structure.

20th Century

Most notable for a rise in Islamic fundamentalism.

When reforms led to many sheikhs becoming profiteering landlords over impoverished sharecroppers, a new ruling clique emerged in 1908, 'The Young Turks', who took power in Istanbul. They sought to make the Ottoman Empire a unified nation-state based on western models, stressing secularism and patriotism over Islamic theology. The earlier half of the 20th century saw many Muslim nation-states becoming secular and prosperous, such as Iraq, Syria and Libya.

However, later in the 20th century there was a backlash to this with the rise of Islamic fundamentalism and Ayatollah Khomeini coming to power in Iran. More recently we have seen the rise of Islamic terrorism, created by US policies, and groups striving for a new caliphate encompassing the Middle East and the Levant.

Political teachings

Introduction

The political teachings of Islam are of great consequence to unbelievers since these impact their lives and society in varying measures. The bedrock of Islamic politics is submission and duality; the world is divided into those who submit to Allah and kafirs that are unbelievers. The fundamental statement of Islam is, '*There is no god but Allah; Muhammad is his prophet*'.

People affirm that Islam is a spiritual path, a religion or a world faith, but this is not strictly true. Islam began as a spiritual system and the beginnings of a new religion proclaimed by Muhammad. It was promoted as a new form of faith in Mecca and continued as such for a time in Medina. This fledgling faith system was initially tolerant, especially towards Jews and Christians who were '*people of the Book*' (the OT). Thus the basic politics of early Islam were tolerant.

However, a change occurred in Medina when Jews and Christians would not accept Muhammad as the final revelation from God in a line of prophetic spokesmen. After this rejection, Muhammad became more extreme in his politics and more bloodthirsty in his actions. When he rose to power in Medina he either banished or slaughtered the Jewish community (see history) for rejecting him. There was no longer any toleration for non-Muslims, especially in the town council or any position of authority in areas of Muslim control.

At this point in Medina Islam changed from being merely a new system of belief to a political power. In fact, political Islam overtook religious Islam at this point. The further history of Islam was not of peace, tolerance or spirituality but of violent expansionism and brutal subjection.

So, from the point of gaining total control of Medina, Islam's chief component was political and not spiritual. Islam is a political power not a spiritual power. During the thirteen years when Muhammad worked as a spiritual evangelist he succeeded in converting 150 people to Islam. When he became a political warrior-leader the religion mushroomed and he became ruler of Arabia within 10 years.

Compare Buddhism, which is a system of religious and ethical teachings. You can be a Buddhist anywhere, in any culture, in any profession, under any government, in any condition. The objective is the personal development of the individual to reach Nirvana, the end of Karma. The goal of Islam is world domination and subjecting all nations to the control of Muslims, mainly by force and violence.

Islam seeks to control all aspects of human society. It dominates the individual with Shari'a law, involving multiple precise regulations aimed to control the individual, enforced by violence sanctions. It controls religious worship, not with principles but with precise regulations so that worship is legalistic. Even the postures of various prayers are regulated. It also seeks to control all nations by violent overthrow of non-Muslim governments. No Muslim can rest until the world is controlled by Muslims and Shari'a law established.

Muslims that do not have such political aims are not true Muslims according to the teachings of the Qur'an and the precedents set by Muhammad.

Politics in Islamic texts

About 60% of the Qur'an is political; mostly about how to relate to Kafirs. Only roughly 40% of the Qur'an is concerned with Muslims and their behaviour. Muslims relationship with unbelievers is not religious, spiritual contact is forbidden.

The scriptures of Islam demand that Muslims dominate unbelievers, overturn their culture and must seek to conquer the world for Allah. These are political objectives.

Effects of Muslim politics in secular societies

Islamic politics has ramifications where there is significant immigration of true Muslims into western society. True Muslims will follow the political teachings of Islam and this has consequences.

True Muslims will not have a goal of settling in a western society peaceably; neither are they interested in integration with non-Muslim cultures. That is not true Islam. Thus Muslim migrants tend to flock in ghettos along tribal lines. Being committed to Islamic laws, and not having any sympathy with western legalistic systems, they will seek to damage western culture in every way they can as part of jihad (see Jihad). Thus westerners are fair game for crime; raping women and girls follows the precedents of Muhammad and his leaders. Defrauding social systems is part of jihad. Burglary, sex-slavery and even murder are also part of performing jihad in western cultures. Really hard Muslims will even seek to find ways to kill large numbers of non-Muslims in one event; if they get killed in this action they go to heaven, so why wouldn't they?

When Muslims settle in a 'host country' they use deception to talk about peace and brotherhood, sharing the same god etc. Slowly they begin to demand civil rights on the basis of their religion. As their numbers grow, usually through immigration, their demands increase: demands for Sharia Law, for example. So far this is the jihad of pressure. When numbers are sufficiently large jihad becomes violent, beginning with crime, riots, violent demonstrations and such like. For Muslims a riot is a battle in a civil war.

Thus all the crimes, atrocities, burglaries, murders, rapes and massacres in Germany, Sweden, France and other countries following the mass migration of Muslims into Christian societies, is not surprising in the least. It was to be expected as part of true Islam.

This is evidenced in current reality. In every place where there has been significant Muslim immigration, even in Australia, the proportion of crimes attributed to Muslims is higher than any other people group. In places where the Muslim immigration has been high (Germany, Sweden, France) the crime rates have skyrocketed hundreds of per cent. This demands a separate evaluation.

When Muslims conquered a territory in history they obliterated the earlier culture completely. There are no traces of the Christian Coptic culture in Egypt or the Christian Byzantine culture in Turkey. Even street and place names are changed to wipe out earlier cultures. Islam must totally dominate whatever it captures.

The idea that Muslims can peacefully merge with kafir societies is false; this is only possible if Muslims are ignorant of what Islam really teaches or are simply Muslim by historic culture and not belief. If true Muslims live in a foreign, kafir society their aim is to slowly overcome it by all possible means; the slowest being gradually overcoming the population by having many children; this is seen as jihad by leaders.

The denials of moderates

Those moderate Muslims that deny that these crimes are true Islam merely show that they are either ignorant of the teachings of Islam and the life of Muhammad, or they are lying.

This brings us to another political aspect of Islam; Muslims are taught by Muhammad that it is acceptable to lie to non-Muslims. In this, Muslims are similar to Jews who have a comparable teaching in the *Kol Nidre* vow. This means that Muslims can never be trusted in a court of law or in public office; their prior loyalty is to jihad and not to social customs or legal statutes.

The implications of all this for western political leaders who are Muslims are very serious. Sadiq Khan is Mayor of London and celebrates his Muslim heritage and has shared platforms with so-called radical Muslim leaders. Now if Sadiq Khan is a genuine Muslim following Muhammad, then his prior aim will be the destruction of western society in London and the elevation of Islamic communities (some would say that this is underway). If this is not his aim then he is not a true Muslim and should stop calling himself one. Those who voted for him ought to be aware of this. There are already towns in Britain where the Muslim population outnumbers white Britons; in some places by 80% to 20%.

Examples of Muslim precedence

Due to fear created in western societies, politicians give Muslims greater priority than anyone else; I will give a few examples.

- Despite monogamy laws in Britain, Muslim immigrants with four wives all qualify for welfare.
- At least in the US, government agencies give preference to Muslim Arabs over Christian Arabs in translation work.
- Forums are arranged for Muslims to talk about Islam but other religions do not get this opportunity.
- Through fear, the media gives Islam carte blanche and does not denigrate or blaspheme Muhammad or Islam. On the contrary, the media constantly blasphemes Christ and denies Christians opportunity to present their views, e.g. on evolution. The press does not want to offend Muslims but continually offends Christians. The news media should be able to offend all sorts of people and expose faults.
- In America airports are changing their plumbing to enable Muslims to wash their feet for prayer.⁸⁶
- US universities have allowed Muslims to have prayer rooms but not for any other religion.

The net result of all this is the slow Islamification of western societies through tolerance. It is gradual jihad.

Deception

Just as Muhammad used deception, so Islam teaches that Muslims can deceive kafirs. This is called '*taqiyya*'. Muhammad said that jihad is deceit.

The great problem with Islamic ethics is its dualism. It has one rule for Muslims and a different set of rules for everyone else. Western democracies, based upon principles of

⁸⁶ World Net Daily, 28 April 2007.

Christian liberty, work on the basis of sovereign rights for everyone equally (at least in theory). All are equal under the law. This is not how Islam works; the kafir has no rights.

Islam is not based on absolute principles of right and wrong, on justice for all, on freedom for all. Its ethics are based upon what Muhammad did or didn't do. Whether it is morally right or wrong, a Muslim follows what Muhammad did. Thus they deceive kafirs, kill kafirs, enslave kafirs and rape kafirs. All sorts of injustice, oppression and violence are justified as being what Muhammad did.

Deception is legitimately used to further jihad. Thus we have seen Muslim spokesmen in high office in western democracies denounce Islamic terrorism publicly and yet praise the terrorists within mosques. Examples of this are: Ali Al Timimi who worked with a White House Chief of Staff and had government clearance or Abdurahman Alamoudi who developed the Pentagon's chaplain corps.⁸⁷

When the Muslims in the Beslan attack on a school in Russia deliberately killed scores of children, Muslim commentators and religious leaders said that this was not Islam; women and children are not to be killed. This is deceit. There are hadiths which do forbid killing of women and children, but there are other hadiths that allow it – typical Islamic dualism. Many Muslim conquerors have killed thousands of women and children. ISIS today is murdering children and even crucifying them.

In the same way Muslim apologists claim that terrorism is not part of Islam. This is deceit; it is a part of Islam and has been from the beginning. Muhammad actually stated that Allah had allowed him to spread Islam by terror and awe. Modern Islamic terrorists are not radicals, they are ordinary Muslims. As Prime Minister Erdogan of Turkey affirmed, '*The term "moderate Islam" is ugly and offensive; there is no moderate Islam; Islam is Islam*'.⁸⁸

Suicide bombers are also a part of traditional Islam. Those who deny this are lying and practising deceit. In usual dualistic fashion, Islam teaches that suicide is a sin; it is forbidden. However, there is a hadith where Muhammad says that killing yourself while killing others kafirs sends you straight to heaven as a martyr.

Oaths can also be contradicted and overturned. A hadith confirms that an oath can be changed by a Muslim for something better; i.e. something that supports jihad. Thus no Muslim can be trusted in an authoritative office in western society; their religion allows them to contradict their oath as a judge, a policeman, a politician or anything else.

Kafirs

A great deal of Islamic literature is devoted to the subject of non-Muslims, unbelievers, infidels or what Muhammad called 'kafirs'. Though 'kafir' is usually translated as 'unbeliever', this is insufficient; 'kafir' is far more derogatory and abusive and carries the sense of something hated and despised. Confirmed non-Muslims are viewed by Islam as trash, rubbish, less than an animal and something to be killed or perhaps enslaved. This is widely hidden from non-Muslims. Most westerners have no clue about this. Allah hates kafirs.⁸⁹

⁸⁷ See Warner; Political Islam, Vol 1, p55.

⁸⁸ Comment on Kanal D TV Arena programme, Milliyet, Turkey, 21 August 2007.

⁸⁹ Qur'an 40.35. [Kafirs are] '*Grievous and odious in the sight of Allah and of the believers. Thus does Allah seal up every heart – of arrogant and obstinate transgressors.*'

Kafirs can be deceived, conspired against, lied to, hated, enslaved, mocked, tortured and killed. 'Kafir' covers all the perceived enemies of Islam: polytheists, idolaters, Christians, Jews, other religions, atheists, agnostics and pagans. Muslims cannot associate with kafirs.

The majority of the Qur'an is devoted to the kafir (64%) while the Sira affords 81% to it and the Hadith 37%.

Islam does not believe in humanity, that is the world of equal people. It believes in a dichotomy of people: Muslims, and kafirs who will go to hell. Hell is not full of people that did wrong, but of people who did not follow Muhammad.

Islam does not believe in the Golden Rule of Christianity (to treat others as you want them to treat you); other Muslims can be treated well but kafirs are to be ruled or killed. Muslims cannot befriend kafirs.⁹⁰

This is how Kafirs should be treated:

When you encounter the Kafirs on the battlefield, cut off their heads until you have thoroughly defeated them.

Qur'an 47:4.

I will send terror into the Kaffirs' hearts, cut off their heads and even the tips of their fingers.

Qur'an 8:12

Dhimmis

Dhimmis are a new class of people invented by Muhammad; the word means 'protected' referring to the fact that though they are unbelievers they are submissive citizens in a Muslim society and thus tolerated for their work. They are second-class citizens within Muslim territory and are, in fact, semi-slaves. In order to survive and work the land they must pay the jizya tax, which is 20-50% of income. This enables them to live in Islamic society, under severe restrictions and practising their religion must be done in private at home.

The dhimmi was originally developed to deal with conquered Jews but enabled them to keep making money or producing food. The wealth of Islam came from the work of dhimmis. Later, due to the vast numbers, most dhimmis were Christians in conquered lands. Thus a dhimmi is a kafir under Sharia Law in a Muslim nation. Only Jews, Christians and some Magians (Persians) could originally be dhimmis. The alternative for Hindus, Buddhists and animists was convert or die but in later periods these also became dhimmis.

The restrictions were widespread. A dhimmi could not sue a Muslim, could not be a manager of a Muslim, had no civil rights, was constantly humiliated, and had to dress according to Islamic law. Worship could be continued in an existing church but bells could not be rung and repairs needed prior permission.

The Treaty of Umar laid out the regulations about dhimmis.⁹¹ For example, a dhimmi could not ride a horse but only a donkey. Dhimmis had to step out of the way to let

⁹⁰ Qur'an 3:118.

⁹¹ 1) No building or repair of churches etc. 2) Free hospitality to Muslims for three days. 3) No sheltering of spies. 4) Can't teach the Qur'an to children. 5) No proselytising, no public confession, no stopping of people

Muslims pass by. They also had to wear special clothing or a badge to identify themselves. The first time Jews were forced to wear a yellow five-pointed star was not in Nazi Germany but in Iraq under Muslim rule. Christians had to wear a belt (which is why belts became standard in western clothing). As early as Caliph Umar (early 8th century) Jews had to wear a yellow badge. This was reinforced by Caliph Al-Mutawakkil (847-861). A document of 1121 from Baghdad states that Jews had to wear a yellow badge on the head and on the neck plus a lead necklace with the word 'dhimmi' on it, as well as a belt. Women had to wear odd coloured shoes and a bell on the neck or shoe.⁹²

Dhimmis were not just second-class citizens with no social power or freedom of expression, having to step out of the way of a Muslim, but were called and considered as 'trash'.⁹³ Many demanded that they be humiliated, '*[Dhimmis must be] disagreed, humiliated and belittled For they are miserable, disgraced and humiliated*'.⁹⁴

In very powerful Muslim controlled states dhimmis could gain some political power, as they did in Spain, but in other areas life was harsher. In Egypt, a dhimmi Coptic Christian could have his tongue cut out if he spoke in Coptic to a Muslim official. In some places riots against dhimmis destroyed entire areas, such as in Smyrna where the Christian church was utterly destroyed after riots in 1922.

Over generations, dhimmis gave up their culture and religion in order to prosper, and became Muslim. This was a clever way to destroy historic civilisations by slow grinding down, and yet keeping the workforce. In this way, Buddhist Afghanistan, Greek Anatolia, Coptic Egypt, Hindu Pakistan and many other places lost all their history and culture.

The ancient culture was also lost through destruction of sacred places, temples, churches, libraries and anything deemed to not be Islamic. The destruction of the Palmyra artefacts and temples by ISIS, or the Buddhist statues by the Taliban is normal Islam. Churches that were not destroyed were converted into mosques. 20-30,000 churches were destroyed in Turkey alone. Other places were defiled and defaced. Frescoes were defaced while the nose of the Sphinx was removed.

Jihad

Jihad is seen as the 6th pillar of Islam. The five pillars are religious but the sixth is political. It is a pillar because it is incumbent upon all Muslims. About 31% of all Islamic texts refer to jihad (67% of the Sira – biography of Muhammad).

Meaning

'Jihad' means struggle and the doctrine has many applications; it is claimed to mean the struggle for personal avoidance of sin in Muslims, for example. However, it is more often

converting to Islam. 6) Show respect for Muslims. 7) No copying of Muslim clothes. 8) No riding of horses, no weapons. 9) No Arabic inscriptions on seals. 10) No fermenting of drinks. 11) Clip the front of heads (to express shame). 12) All dress the same to show they are dhimmis. 13) No display of crosses. No noise in church meetings or funerals. No slaves that have been given to Muslims. 14) Houses must be smaller and lower than Muslim houses. Whoever strikes a Muslims will cease being protected (i.e. execution).

⁹² Paul Johnson; '*A History of the Jews*', Harper & Row, (1987), p204-206.

⁹³ The Arabic words means 'bodily fluid', 'waste', 'garbage'.

⁹⁴ Ibn Kathir, commentary on Qur'an 9.29.

applied today in the sense of the struggle to defeat the unbelieving enemies of Islam, the kaffir,⁹⁵ in a 'holy war' and this is the prophet Muhammad's view in the Qur'an.

The Hadith says this about jihad in a story about why the Muslims were invading Persia:

Our prophet, the messenger of our Lord, has ordered us to fight you until you worship Allah alone or pay the jizya, the dhimmi tax, and our prophet has informed us that our Lord says whoever amongst us is killed shall go to paradise and lead a life of great luxury. Whoever amongst us remain alive will become your master.⁹⁶

This summarises jihad. In other words, Persia was invaded because it was kafir and jihad demands attacking all kafirs and subjecting their nations.

When Islam was weak in the early stages, jihad involved patience and persuasion, trying to convert individuals. When Islam was strong, such as after the Hejira, jihad was dominating others by violent means and subjugating nations.

Non-violence

Jihad is not always violent struggle; it is any means to overpower kafir societies and enlarge Islamic territory.

With the power of oil revenues, many Islamic nations use money and influence to finance strategies in the west. Saudi money is poured into America at this time to influence politicians and change education and society. For example, school textbooks never mention anything negative about Islam.

Saudi money financed Hillary Clinton's presidential campaign because her intentions were more Muslim immigration and war with Sunni enemies (such as Iran and Russia). Clinton's hypocrisy was demonstrated by her claim to support women, feminism and Gays when her main financial supporter killed Gays and stoned women.

The Saudis pump millions of dollars each year to spread Islam and Sharia Law. They build mosques, publish books and leaflets, produce education materials, influence schools and universities, promote videos and public speakers, they produce documentaries and talk shows and they influence politicians; the list is endless. All this is jihad. This form of jihad is what causes universal ignorance of what true Islam is all about; and that is the plan. By this means they intend to totally subvert western society, and they are doing a great job.

Violence

The Hadith shows us that violent jihad is the main form of it. Only 2% of the Hadith refers to peaceful jihad while 98% is about killing the kafir.

A prophet should not take prisoners of war until he has fought and slaughtered in the land.

Qur'an 8.67

Killing kafirs pleases Allah, therefore killing is a pleasure to be done without mercy and with joy. Killing is normal Islamic activity. Allah praises people who kill kafirs. The highest form of activity is to die while trying to destroy kafir civilisations. Beheading is a normal part of the Sunna ('way').

⁹⁵ Arabic *kāfir* 'infidel'; from *kafara*, 'not believe'.

⁹⁶ Bukhari, 4. 53. 386.

I will send terror into the kafir's hearts, cut off their heads and even the tips of their fingers.

Qur'an 8.12

He took the head back to Muhammad and said, 'Here is the head of the enemy of Allah,' and threw it at Muhammad's feet. The prophet said, 'Praise be to Allah'.⁹⁷

Torture is a good tactic of war. Since Allah tortures kafirs in the afterlife, so a Muslim can torture kafirs in this life.

Torture the Jew until you extract what he has.⁹⁸

Historically, the violent sense of jihad was the catalyst for the rapid warlike expansion of Islam in its early centuries so that it not only took over all of Christian North Africa, Turkey and the Middle East, plus parts of the pagan Orient, but it also came close to conquering all of Europe until stopped by Charles Martel⁹⁹ at the Battle of Tours¹⁰⁰ in 732. Later Muslim advances into Europe were stopped by the Crusades and then the expulsion of the Moors from Spain.

A key prompt for Islamic terrorists to commit such actions in a suicide fashion is the Islamic doctrine of heaven. This promises all manner of pleasures in a 'paradise' (garden) where all a person's desires are fulfilled. There are all kinds of food, drink and servants in a beautiful landscape, such as rivers of pure milk. More questionable, but widely believed, are the 70 or 72 virgin servants that a martyr for Islam can claim and marry. Though the Qur'an does not mention the number, it does teach that jihadists will get virgins in Paradise.

So, an Islamic radical terrorist commits atrocities to struggle for the advance (not just defence) of Islam and for the rewards he will get in heaven.

Be aware that Paradise lies under the shadow of swords.¹⁰¹

From the Qur'an's point of view jihad is defensive because kafir's have already rejected Muhammad and that is an act of war; jihad is a response to that rejection.

The commands to kill unbelievers

Islam commands servants of Allah to murder kaffirs (unbelievers); there are multiple passages in the Qur'an which affirm this.

Scholars identify over 109 verses in the Qur'an that call for violence or war with unbelievers. Beheadings are commanded in the Qur'an, as well as chopping off fingers and to kill kafirs wherever they are hiding. Muslims that do not enjoin this jihad are told they will go to hell.

Unlike the Old Testament's texts on violence, which are restricted by context and history, the Qur'an's verses are open-ended and not restricted by historical context.¹⁰² There are very few verses about tolerance or peace.

⁹⁷ Ishaq 452.

⁹⁸ Ishaq 764.

⁹⁹ Charles Martel (c.688–741), Frankish ruler of the eastern part of the Frankish kingdom (essentially France) from 715 and the whole kingdom from 719, grandfather of Charlemagne. His rule marked the beginning of Carolingian power.

¹⁰⁰ Tours a city in west central France, on the River Loire; population 133,400 at 1990.

¹⁰¹ Bukhari 4.52.73.

Muslims are forbidden to enter jihad against another Muslim; therefore, groups denounce fellow Muslims as *Takfiri* (apostates) to allow them to kill other Muslims.

Examples from the Qur'an

Kill them wherever you find them ... fight them until there is no more Fitnah (unbelief).

Qur'an 2:191-193. [The context is not defensive war but offensive against those who resist Islam.]

Fighting is prescribed for you ... which is good for you.

Qur'an 2:216.

Muslims must not take the kafir as friends.

Qur'an 3:28.

Any religion other than Islam is not acceptable.

Qur'an 3:85.

Let those who fight in the way of Allah ... be he slain or be he victorious, on him we shall bestow a vast reward.

Qur'an 4:74.

Those who believe fight in the cause of Allah.

Qur'an 4:476

Take not friends from their ranks (unbelievers) ... seize them and slay them wherever you find them.

Qur'an 4:89.

Allah has preferred ... those who strive hard and fight ... Unto each, Allah has promised good [Paradise].

Qur'an 4:95. [Note that the whole passage criticises Muslims that do not fight saying that they are less worthy to Allah. It also confirms that 'jihad' means violence.]

The punishment of those who wage war against Allah and his messenger and strive to make mischief in the land is only this, they should be murdered or crucified or their hands and their feet should be cut off on opposite sides or they should be imprisoned ... and have grievous chastisement.

Qur'an 5:33. [This shows that the extreme punishments of IS and Sunni Saudi Arabia are only following the basic teaching of the Qur'an.]

I will cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve. Therefore strike off their heads and strike off every fingertip of them.

Qur'an 8:12.

Fight with them until there is no more Fitnah and religion is all for Allah.

Qur'an 8:39.

Muslims must muster all weapons to terrorise kafirs.

Qur'an 8.60.

Kafir are stupid; urge the Muslims to fight them.

Qur'an 8.65.

¹⁰² The divine command for genocide of the Canaanites (as judgment for their great sins) was time specific. Christians are not commanded to do such things; indeed, Christ commanded that his followers love and bless their enemies. The apostles reiterated this.

It is not for a Prophet that he should have prisoners of war until he had made a great slaughter in the land.

Qur'an 8:67.

Oh Prophet, exhort the believers to fight.

Qur'an 8:65.

Slay the idolaters wherever you find them, and take them captive and besiege them and lie in wait for them in every ambush.

Qur'an 9:5.

Fight those who do not believe in Allah.

Qur'an 9:29.

The Jews and the Christians are perverts; fight them.

Qur'an 9:30.

Oh you who believe fight those of the unbelievers who are near to you and let them find in you hardness.

Qur'an 9:123.

When we wish to destroy a town ... we destroy it with utter destruction.

Qur'an 17:16.

Punish the kafirs with garments of fire, hooked iron rods, boiling water; melt their skin and bellies.

Qur'an 22:19.

Therefore listen not to the unbelievers but strive against [lit. 'jihad'] with the utmost strenuousness.

Qur'an 25:52.

We verily shall urge thee on against them, then they will be your neighbours in it but a little while. Accursed, they will be seized wherever found and slain with a fierce slaughter.

Qur'an 33:60-62. ['Slaughter' is translated as 'merciless murder' or 'horrible murder' in some versions.]

Those who disbelieve follow falsehood ... So when you meet those who disbelieve smite at their necks [behead them] till when you have killed and wounded many of them ... Those who are killed in the Way of Allah, he will never let their deeds be lost.

Qur'an 47:3-4.

Surely Allah loves those who fight in his cause.

Qur'an 61:4.

Hadith and commentaries

Fight with the Jews, and the stone behind which a Jew will be hiding will say, 'Oh Muslim, there is a Jew hiding behind me, so kill him'.

Bukhari¹⁰³ 52:177.

The prophet ... was asked whether it was permissible to attack the pagan warriors at night with the probability of exposing their women and children to danger. The prophet replied, "They are from them."

¹⁰³ Sahih al-Bukari is in the prophetic tradition ('hadith') of Sunni Islam.

Bukhari 52:256. [I.e. it is permissible to kill women and children in attacking pagans.

Allah's apostle said ... I have been made victorious with terror.

Bukhari 52:220.

The messenger of Allah said, "I have been commanded to fight against people till they testify that there is no god but Allah".

Muslim 1:33.

Allah's apostle said, "I have been ordered to fight the people till they say, 'None has the right to be worshipped but Allah' And if they say so, pray like our prayers, face our Qibla and slaughter as we slaughter, then their blood and property will be sacred to us and we will not interfere with them except legally".

Bukhari 8:387.

Bukhari 11:626 – *'[Muhammad said] "I decided to order a man to lead the prayer and then take a flame to burn all those who had not left their houses for the prayer, burning them alive inside their homes."'*

Muslim¹⁰⁴ 20:4696 – *'The messenger of Allah said, "One who died but did not fight in the way of Allah nor did he express any desire for Jihad died the death of a hypocrite".'*

Tabari¹⁰⁵ 7:97 *'The prophet declared, "Kill any Jew who falls under your power".'*

Tabari 9:69 – *'[Muhammad] Killing unbelievers is a small matter to us.'*

Ibn Ishaq¹⁰⁶ / Hisham¹⁰⁷ 484 – *'Allah desires killing them [the enemy] to manifest the religion.'*

Ibn Ishaq / Hisham 990 – *'Cutting off someone's head while shouting "Ahhahu Akbar" is an Islamic tradition that began with Muhammad.'*

Ibn Ishaq / Hisham 992 – *'Fight everyone in the way of Allah and kill those who disbelieve in Allah.'* [Muhammad's instructions to his men.]

Thus we see that the Qur'an, and other sacred works and commentaries, command:

- Holy war until the earth is subdued.
- Murder of individuals and even neighbours.
- Violence against unbelievers.
- Honour killings (Qur'an 18:80-81).¹⁰⁸
- Beheadings.
- Oppression of other religions.
- Destruction of un-submissive towns.

And much more.

¹⁰⁴ Sahih Muslim, one of the six major collections of the hadith in Sunni Islam.

¹⁰⁵ Abu Jafar Muhammad ibn Jarir al-Tabari was a prominent Persian scholar of the Qur'an.

¹⁰⁶ Muhammad ibn Ishaq ibn Yasar ibn Khiyar was an Arab historian and biographer of the prophet Mohammad.

¹⁰⁷ Hisham ibn Abd al-Malik was the 10th Umayyad caliph who ruled from 724-743.

¹⁰⁸ That is the murder of family members that bring shame to Allah.

Rewards for violent martyrs

Allah has preferred ... those who strive hard and fight ... Unto each, Allah has promised good [Paradise].

Qur'an 4:95.

Whoso obeys Allah and his messenger, he will make him enter gardens underneath which rivers flow [i.e. Paradise].

Qur'an 48:17. .]. [We have earlier seen that obeying Allah includes fighting unbelievers.]

You strive hard and fight for the cause of Allah and his messenger ... He will forgive you your sins and admit you into gardens under which rivers flow and pleasant dwelling in gardens of 'Adn [Eden].

Qur'an 61:10-12.

Allah's apostle said, "Know that Paradise is under the shades of swords."

Bukhari¹⁰⁹ 52:73.

He [Muhammad] said, "There is another act which elevates the position of a man in Paradise to a grade one hundred [higher], and the elevation between one grade and the other is equal to the height of heaven from the earth. He [Abu Sa'id] said, "What is that act?" he replied, "Jihad in the way of Allah."

Muslim 20:4645

Without a doubt, those who fight and war for Allah will be greatly rewarded, according to Islamic teaching and scripture. No wonder young idealistic jihadis are ready to commit suicide or die in a terrorist attack. It is following basic teachings of Muhammad.

Torture

Torture is also a normal part of jihad. Those who deny this are lying. Muhammad himself tortured people, such as a Jew whom he tortured with fire to obtain information about treasure.

The model of Muhammad is sufficient for Muslims to advocate torture as they see fit. It is Sunna ('the way').

Western Muslims

Increasingly, the effects of huge migrations of Muslims into the west created by the policies of the global elite and funded by the like of George Soros has meant an increasing number of Muslim immigrants in western cultures that favour Sharia Law.

For example, regarding the situation in the US (which has less Muslim immigration than Sweden, France or Germany):

- 30% of American Muslims believe it is legitimate to use violence against those that insult Islam.¹¹⁰
- 33% said that Sharia Law should take precedence over the US Constitution.¹¹¹
- 58% of Muslim Americans believe that criticism of Islam or Muhammad is not to be perceived as free speech under the First Amendment.¹¹²
- 45% believe that those who mock Islam should be persecuted by law.¹¹³

¹⁰⁹ Sahih al-Bukari is in the prophetic tradition ('hadith') of Sunni Islam.

¹¹⁰ Centre for Security Policy, (2015).

¹¹¹ Ibid.

¹¹² Wenzel Strategies poll (2012).

¹¹³ Ibid.

- 12% believe that blaspheming Islam should be punishable by death.¹¹⁴
- 26% of young American Muslims believe suicide bombings are justified.¹¹⁵

Regarding Great Britain:

- 35% of young British Muslims believe suicide bombings are justified.¹¹⁶
- 100,000 British Muslims sympathise with suicide bombers and terrorists.¹¹⁷
- 23% British Muslims believe that Sharia Law should replace British law in areas with large Muslim populations.¹¹⁸
- 52% believe that homosexuality should be illegal.¹¹⁹
- 31% think that polygamy should be legalised.¹²⁰
- 33% refuse to condemn the stoning of women for adultery.¹²¹
- In 2015 the Muslim population of Britain surpassed 3.5 million, or 5.5% of the population. Britain has the third largest population of Muslims in Europe after France and Germany.¹²²

Violence against Muslims

Muslim on Muslim attacks has been a constant feature of Islam since the beginning. In fact, the majority of the modern violence caused by Islam is directed towards Muslims.

The reason for this is that the Qur'an teaches that not only must unbelievers be attacked, hypocrites and apostates must be killed as well. This allows one Muslim faction to deem another faction as apostate and then have reason to kill them.

For example, Tamerlane not only attacked, massacred and destroyed Muslim populations and cities, such as those in Persia, Iraq and even including Baghdad, but he also destroyed mosques. Even ancient, widely admired mosques were ruined if it suited his plans or was 'necessary' revenge. Being the '*Sword of Islam*' did not stop the most powerful Muslim ruler from killing his own religious people or destroying mosques.

I will give one example. In the sack of Damascus, Tamerlane destroyed the 8th-century Umayyad Great Mosque (as well as many other mosques) which had been considered one of the wonders of the world. Ibn Khaldun wrote, '*this was an absolutely dastardly and abominable deed*'.¹²³ The historian Justin Marozzi opines, '*a monument to the Muslim faith had been desecrated by an army of Muslims under the command of a man who actively sought recognition as the Warrior of Islam*'.¹²⁴

¹¹⁴ Ibid.

¹¹⁵ Ibid

¹¹⁶ Wenzel Strategies poll (2012).

¹¹⁷ Gatestone Institute, Soeren kern, 'UK: What British Muslims really think', 17 April 2016.

¹¹⁸ Ibid.

¹¹⁹ Ibid.

¹²⁰ Ibid.

¹²¹ Ibid.

¹²² Ibid.

¹²³ Marozzi, p309.

¹²⁴ Marozzi, p309.

Expansion

Political expansion is a basic principle of Islam; it must continue to subjugate all nations until the world is submitted to Allah in one caliphate.

Thus Islam grew rapidly and continued to expand with only a few setbacks. Fairly quickly (in world terms) Islam conquered vast areas from India to central Europe and much of northern Africa. It was only held back three times: the first time at Tours in 732 when Charles Martel checked the Muslim advance into Europe. The second was in Spain in 1492; the third in Eastern Europe in 1683.

Today Islam continues to expand politically. In Europe at the present time it is rapidly expanding through migration and establishing ghettos in prime cities.

Political sects

Ba'thism

(Arabic: *al-ba'ath* = 'renaissance'.) This is a secular, nationalistic ideology to create a unified Arab state through a progressive revolutionary government and a renaissance of Arab culture and ethics.

It is based on the theories of various intellectuals of support modernising, single-party states, rejecting political pluralism and advocating a sort of socialist economics. Ba'athist politics prevails in Syria under Assad and formerly existed in Iraq under Saddam Hussein, however these were really neo-Ba'athism since they did not crusade for a unified Arab state but authoritarian government.

Retaliation

More than any other religion, Islam reacts with vitriol and violence against perceived provocation, whether this be verbal, humorous, castigation, criticism or blasphemy. When Buddhists are disparaged, there is no crusade of Buddhists against the critics, attacking or killing people. Christians are derided constantly in western media and the Lord Jesus is blasphemed every day by millions of people as a norm; yet Christians do not go around killing such blasphemers.

The reaction of Muslims to attack critics and blasphemers is political not religious. The Danish cartoons of Muhammad are a good example; these caused weeks of rioting, threats lawsuits, deaths and destruction of property. The superficial provocation of a mere cartoon resulted in serious political action. No other religion reacts like this; it is a significant feature of Islam. When Salman Rushdie wrote a novel that offended Muslims, a fatwah (death threat) was placed upon him that continues to this day.

Most religions maintain some kind of discipline upon their own members. Islam tries to discipline non-members, kafirs; this is political and unusual.

As a result of the political pressure used by Muslims, the western media is now scared of using anti-Islamic content for fear of violence. The threat of beheading has resulted in a curtailment of free speech in the west; this is a political victory for Islam.

Example of a purist Islamic state: Saudi Arabia

Saudi Arabia is perhaps the most well known Muslim state in the west. While some Muslim countries are fairly tolerant and secular (e.g. Syria) others are intolerant and fundamentalist, such as the Gulf States and Saudi Arabia.

The west is a key ally of Saudi Arabia because it is a main provider of oil. Britain and America sell billions of pounds of military equipment to it, train its military, the UK trains its police officers, and crown princes / kings are given places of honour by the Queen in London. All this is incredibly hypocritical since Saudi Arabia is one of the most regressive, backward, implacable, criminal regimes in the world. Its human rights record is appalling and the ruling authority is tyrannical.

Furthermore, the Saudi authorities are the main sponsors of Muslim terrorism in the world and have been for decades. The Saudi High Commission in Bosnia-Herzegovina was the centre of refuge, funding and training for Muslim terrorists in Europe. Saudi Arabia finances and supports what the west calls Al-Qaeda as well as ISIS. Most of the 9/11 hijackers were Saudi. Tens of billions have been spent on propaganda materials promoted world wide to support Salafism.

So, on the world stage Saudi Arabia is a dangerous contributor to world affairs; but what of its domestic situation? It is clearly the enemy of Shi'ites and other religions world wide but what of its internal affairs?

It is a tyrannical, despotic, ruthless monarchy that is based upon Wahhabism / Salafism and Sharia Law. The royal family is treated as something to be worshipped with state education propaganda brainwashing children to hate outsiders, despise other religions and worship the crown. It teaches young children that Christians should be killed.

Any dissent of even the most minor variety is stamped upon with brutal punishments. Political activists are imprisoned, flogged up to 1,000 times, tortured, beheaded and their bodies hung in public places. It is common to see tall cranes holding up bodies of headless victims in the streets. Sometimes people are crucified.

It is common that young people are violated. An ITV documentary by Tuppence Middleton on Saudi Arabia using secret filming showed how a young 17-year old, who had merely expressed some political concerns, was imprisoned and sentenced to death. He didn't even know the meaning of the word 'treason' with which he had been charged.

Tourists are banned from the country because the ruling class do not want outsiders to see what is happening internally. Music is banned in public places. I saw a young man who was playing a Saz (type of lute) beaten by religious police, his lute smashed and his fingers broken.

Women are treated absolutely despicably. They are treated as if they are rubbish by men. I saw a woman in a supermarket thrown to the floor because she was in a man's way in the aisle, her shopping kicked aside. Routinely women are attacked in the streets, thrown to the floor, kicked and punched for no reason. Any woman driving a car (which is forbidden) is imprisoned and beaten. The car will be destroyed. I saw a film of this taking place.

Women are routinely beheaded for the most trivial offences. Usually some serious crime is attributed to them, such as sedition or treason. Women can be beaten or flogged in public. Some have received hundreds of strokes.

Political activists are killed, even those with some authority and public respect, such as sheikhs. Their crimes are not insurgency but merely speaking out against the establishment or arranging a peaceful protest march.

The capital city has a public square that is used for executions, which are a regular occurrence. Its official name is Deera Square in Riyadh but it is known locally as 'Chop Chop Square'. To deal with the profuse blood letting there are special drains in the centre. Here are some official figures, which may be under-estimates of the reality.

- 2011: 26 executions.
- 2013: 79 executions (half were foreigners).
- 2015: 157 executions.
- On 2 January 2016, 47 were executed.

Death sentences are usually at the discretion of judges rather than formal Sharia Law. Most often the method is beheading with a sword but sometimes it is by stoning and occasionally by firing squad. Sometimes the dead body is crucified for several days in a public place.

Despite the royal family having a splendid fortune,¹²⁵ and despite the massive revenues from oil,¹²⁶ there is a huge problem of poverty in the country. It is estimated that at least 25% of the population is in poverty (between 2-4 million people). Even in Riyadh, beggars congregate in the shadows of shopping malls while slum areas struggle in the south of the city.

Often women, who have to provide for several children, can be seen begging for food in the streets or even sleeping in squares or roads. Villages outside the lush urban areas are little more than hovels with terrible local poverty. A woman named Souad al-Shamir is typical. She lives in a concrete house in a trash filled alley. She has no job, no money, five children under 14 and a sick husband laid up with chronic heart problems.¹²⁷ The government does not provide any income.

None of the riches from the west have trickled down to the people in general but are amassed by those in power. So much for Muslim caring for Muslim.

This is a picture of what happens when Islamic purism dominates a modern nation.

The political import of Muslim migration

Consistent Muslims have a prior loyalty to Islam than to any host country they may live in. Moderate Muslims that have integrated with western culture and prospered (note the Pakistanis in Britain)¹²⁸ are not consistent in their faith but are compromised and

¹²⁵ In 2013 King Abdullah's personal fortune was estimated at \$18bn, making him the third richest royal after the rulers of Thailand and Brunei.

¹²⁶ In 2012 this generated \$300 billion.

¹²⁷ The Guardian, Kevin Sullivan, 'Saudi Arabia's riches conceal a growing problem of poverty', 1 January 2013.

¹²⁸ By benevolent nepotism and emphasising disciplined education of their children Pakistanis have gradually cornered various markets in British society. First they took over corner shops, then sub-Post Offices. As they became more affluent they directed their children into medical practice so that perhaps the majority of doctors in the NHS are Pakistani; and then other top professions. This is not racism; I applaud their common sense and entrepreneurial spirit. I am simply sad that British parents have been far less

considered as apostate by fundamentalist Muslims. It is the fundamentalists that are being true to the Qur'an and Muhammad.

What is bandied about by the mainstream media about 'radicalists' or 'hate-preachers' teaching in British mosques actually refers to Islamic teachers being true to their faith. The increasing growth of Islamic fundamentalism worldwide is leading to the development of Muslim ghettos in western cultures where Sharia Law is practised in secret (sometimes not so secret) and where a sub-culture develops within a host culture in London, Brussels, Paris, Malmo or Cologne.

Extreme forms of this Islamic community within a community includes the radical training of jihadis that is more akin to the military training in Islamic camps in Iraq, Pakistan, Afghanistan and Somalia.¹²⁹ It is these training grounds that send out terrorists to bomb and murder in sensitive places in the host country; there are thousands of these every year (see 'violence' and 'jihad'). Those political leaders who denounce such attacks, such as those in Paris, Nice, Brussels or Berlin, as being perpetrated by 'extremists' or 'radical Islamists' are lying and they know it. This is merely a normal aspect of jihad found in the Qur'an; action that would have been applauded by Muhammad.

Islam seeks to take over the whole world and it is the duty of every Muslim to do what he can in jihad to achieve this end. Violence is not only acceptable in pursuing this goal it is an expected normal aspect of achieving it. This is the real political import of true Islam in the west and it is being hid from the public by political lies that are part of a bigger agenda – the destruction of western society and of Christianity in particular.

These ghettos in the west are really political sects that are fifth-monarchy members committed to engineering social (and later political) destruction of the host country. Those in the left that particularly emphasise tolerance and inclusion of Muslims are doing so either in ignorance of the facts or they are pushing some hidden agenda. In Britain the left have engineered a Labour Muslim Mayor of London who has shared public platforms with 'radical' Islamist teachers.

Everywhere recent Muslim migrants descend they have caused chaos. They are destabilising entire regions in Germany, France and Sweden. In areas where Muslims have settled the crime rate has gone through the roof. Rapes, thefts and murders have risen dramatically. In some areas, like Malmo, the police have stated that they are no longer able to control the situation. Women are not safe to walk the streets even in daylight. Children as young as five have been raped, killed and their bodies dumped in a canal.

Britain is not exempt, even though the mainstream media is not highlighting this situation.

By March 2016 the UK had resettled 1,602 Syrian people under the Syrian Vulnerable Person Resettlement scheme. Now whether these are really refugees, vulnerable or even Syrian is a different matter (most are not), but they are all Muslims. However, the fact is that of these 1,602 people, nearly 900 were arrested for rape and paedophilia.¹³⁰ It took a Freedom of Information request from the Sun newspaper to discover these shocking figures.

assiduous and failed to establish competition. In fact, my best friend, as a young child at junior school, was a Pakistani girl who was incredibly intelligent.

¹²⁹ Note 'Londonistan' by Melanie Phillips, Gibson Square (2006).

¹³⁰ Daily Express, Siobhan Mcfadyen, 'Police arrest 900 Syrians in England and Wales for crimes including rape and child abuse', 1 August 2016.

What the west is pursuing is a policy based on stupidity and ignorance. Such crimes are not crimes at all within Islam; they are the natural duty of Muslims in support of Islam. Muslims should terrorise, attack and rape non-Muslims and damage the infrastructures of western societies. These 'Syrians' are performing normal Islamic duties in pursuance of jihad.

Taking hundreds of thousands, or even millions, of Muslim migrants into western nations is not just a recipe for disaster, it is already proving to begin the start of the destruction of European Christian infrastructure already, especially in Germany, France, Sweden, Italy and Greece.

An example: London - Jihad Central

Whether it is by accident or design, the west is opening its arms to admit those intent on destroying western culture. Muslim immigrants, for a long time, have entered western Europe, and particularly Britain, to take advantage of the welfare state, only to use this cover for developing a strategic western Islamic base which has become the main breeding ground for Islamic jihad, radicalism and terrorism, in Europe. There are key centres around the UK, such as Dewsbury, but the headquarters of operations is London.

Advocates

Left wingers

The main advocates of Islamic immigration are left-wingers and modern liberals claiming that they are being tolerant, humanitarian and politically correct. Indeed, the British left has made a pact with Muslims going back decades; the culmination of which is a Muslim Labour London mayor. Any criticism of immigration policies is met immediately with cries of 'racism' and 'Islamophobia'. This is largely due to the indoctrination of young people through socialist propaganda in the education system.

The self-styled progressives on the British left, for whom human rights have replaced Christianity as the religion for a godless society, have formed a jaw-dropping axis with militant, fundamentalist Islamism. ... Their goal ... the destruction of Western society and its foundational values.¹³¹

Note that many of the centres of British Islamic activity are also notable left-wing strongholds, such as London or the Northeast.

Prince Charles

Leading the establishment support for Islam is the Prince of Wales, the patron of the Centre for Islamic Studies in Oxford. Some suspect that the reason that the Queen has not yet abdicated is that she is preventing her own son from becoming a king that would wreck the Christian heritage of Britain. Instead of swearing the oath to defend the Christian faith as head of state, Charles has said that he would only swear to defend faith as a principle. In fact, he is hostile to Christianity and deeply supportive of Islam in words, speech and actions. He was largely influential in getting the Finsbury Park mosque built in London which has become a seed-bed of jihadi terrorism and radicalism. He also expressed dismay at the animosity against Muslims demonstrated after 9/11.

¹³¹ Melanie Phillips, p29.

Politicians: a few examples

- George Galloway: He actively sought the support of Muslims in order to secure his elections as MP for the Respect Party, promising to advance their interests. He famously praised Saddam Hussein to his face (though he was right to criticise American policy of Iraq).
- Ken Livingstone: The former Mayor of London welcomed and embraced Yusuf Al-Qaradawi¹³² to London in 2004.
- Keith Vaz:¹³³ In March 1989, in Leicester, Vaz led a 3,000 strong demonstration that burned an effigy of Salman Rushdie, calling for his death. In typical Muslim dualism he had earlier assured Rushdie of his full support.
- Jack Straw: the former Home Secretary actively cultivated Muslim votes to secure his election. He raised Adam Patel to the peerage in 2000 as a bribe to secure the Indian Muslim vote and protect his 9,000 majority. He supported Muslim issues in a number of other areas. In a speech at the Muslim News awards in March 2006 Straw affirmed that the tensions between Islam and the modern world (i.e. terrorism) had arisen from a prejudiced reaction to Muslim religious piety and from a reaction to large numbers of Muslim immigrants. In other words, Muslim terrorism was caused by westerners.
- John Denham (Labour MP and former chairman of the Commons Home Affairs Select Committee – covering terrorist issues) said that the alienation of young British Muslims was the government's fault for failing to give the issues and concerns of Muslims any priority.¹³⁴
- The Pakistani-born bishop of Rochester, Dr Michael Nazir-Ali, has affirmed that a number of Labour MPs need the support of Islamic leaders in their community to stay in power; thus they protect their interests above others.
- Mike O'Brien (former Labour minister): pleaded with Muslims for votes in an article published in *The Muslim Weekly* during the 2005 election campaign. He argued that that Labour had gone to great lengths to accede to British Muslim demands. This shows the depths of Labour appeasement to Muslims.¹³⁵
- Tony Blair: two weeks after the Muslim Council of Britain demanded a new law banning religious discrimination, Blair promised he would provide it. Mike O'Brien called this, 'a major victory for the Muslim community in Britain'.¹³⁶
- Gordon Brown: as Chancellor of the Exchequer Brown stated that he planned to turn Britain into the most Islam-friendly economy in the western world through offering more and more 'Sharia compliant' financial products to British Muslims.
- Sadiq Khan: despite being Mayor of London, representing a wide-range of ethnic and religious people, Khan has shared a platform with radical Islamic extremists calling for jihad against the west on more than nine separate occasions. He has called for a lifting of the ban on Louis Farrakhan and has spoken at a conference

¹³² Who has written justifying suicide bombers and wife beating. He is the Muslim Brotherhood's spiritual leader.

¹³³ Labour MP, former Minister for Europe, member of the Privy Council, former Chairman of the Home Affairs Select Committee. His career was mired in scandal that included bribes, failing to report donations and jobs, assisting criminals, making false accusations (for which he was suspended from the House of Commons for one month), consorting with male prostitutes and more.

¹³⁴ Peter Osborne; *Spectator*, 23 September 2005.

¹³⁵ Mike O'Brien; 'Labour and British Muslims: Can we dream the same dream?', *Muslim Weekly*, no. 61 (7-13 January 2006).

¹³⁶ Mike O'Brien; 'Labour and British Muslims: Can we dream the same dream?', *Muslim Weekly*, no. 61 (7-13 January 2006).

with Sajeel Abu Ibrahim, a member of the organisation that trained a 7/7 bomber. He appeared with five extremists in 2004. He defended Yusuf Al-Qaradawi. He defended Islamic terrorism, which he blamed on British foreign policy. He defended, as a lawyer, Zacarias Moussaoui, a member of Al-Qaeda suspected as being involved in the 9/11 attacks. He defended extremist Azzam Tamimi who threatened the attacks against the publishers of cartoon about Muhammad. He wrote a chapter of a book detailing how to sue the police for racism. He supports Suliman Gani, a London imam who has urged female subordination, condemned homosexuality and organ transplants and has called for an Islamic caliphate. He shared a platform 9 times with Gani.

It is safe to say that the Labour party has made an informal pact with Muslims in Britain and has become their advocate for many years. When Zac Goldsmith pointed out some accurate facts about Sadiq Khan's support for Islamic extremism, the most vociferous voices issuing condemnation were socialists Owen Jones and Dianne Abbot, using the most vituperative language. The false claims of Goldsmith's racism probably cost him the election.

Universities

Universities have been an active breeding ground for Islamic extremism and this has been ignored by the government. Many terrorists came out of the British university system, such as Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh, Zacarias Moussaoui or Mohammed Sidique Khan. Al-Qaeda has actively recruited students in universities using organised networks to create radicals. A number of radical Muslim groups, even though officially banned, operate within universities under cover names. One professor that exposed the extent of this was slandered and sacked. University officials failed to do anything about this recruitment even when it was revealed.

The problem is that the sheer facts of the depth of jihad in the UK are shocking in the extreme; yet modern liberals have their heads stuck in the sand and rage against common sense. This folly will continue from the left until one day they are victims of jihad personally; then they may wake up if they survive.

Inactivity

Faced with the rise of militant Muslims in the UK the British Civil Service has consistently refused to identify radical Islam as a national problem. One has to question why this is so since these professionals are not stupid.¹³⁷

In the secret services there is a downplaying of the influence of Islamist ideology, demonstrated by the London bombers. Again this raises many questions that cannot be discussed here.¹³⁸

Over and over again, for several decades, the political establishment of Britain has buried its head in the sand about the increasing problem of militant jihadis. The terrible scandal of the Rotherham rape culture is but the tip of the iceberg. In that scandal, where scores of young girls were raped repeatedly, the police, the CPS,¹³⁹ the local councillors and the social services all conspired together to defend the Muslim perpetrators over years for fear of being seen as racist.

¹³⁷ Such as: is the policy of defending radical Islamism, and accusing critics as being racist, part of a bigger plan?

¹³⁸ Such as the conspiracy theories that the bombers were a ploy of the intelligence services using patsies.

¹³⁹ Crown Prosecution Service.

In media reports it is common that headlines avoid linking the term ‘Muslim’ or ‘Islamic’ to terrorist attacks obviously caused by jihadists. Thus the headlines for the Nice truck attack blamed the truck, e.g. ‘*Truck attacks crowd*’. Editors go out of their way to avoid linking terrorism with Muslims; despite the vast majority of terrorist attacks being committed by Muslims. This very day it was reported that a Muslim man attacked police officers in Paris with a machete while shouting *Allahu Akbar*, but was shot dead. The BBC did not mention the man being a Muslim or that the attack was Islamic.¹⁴⁰

Jihad is a world struggle for domination: London is at the centre of this

I reaffirm that the fact is that genuine Muslim immigrants have no intention of integrating at all. Their prior loyalty is to the *umma*, the community of Islam. Jihad means that they are to do everything in their power to destroy British civilisation, and especially Christianity, and then to either subjugate every citizen or kill them if they refuse to convert. This is why they form ghettos in the areas that they settle.

Muslims see themselves as being at war with everyone else and all means are acceptable to further this war, whether it is a suicide bomb, a machete attack, driving a truck through crowds, issuing propaganda, taking over schools, proselytising, raping kafir young women and children, getting into positions of power through deception, or anything else. Most British citizens have no clue about this whatsoever and shout ‘racist’ if anyone tries to educate them.

The London Bombings of 2005 opened up the fact that there were ‘integrated’, or second generation, Muslim citizens willing to carry out terrorist attacks on their own country; biting the hand that fed them.

Intelligence reports of 2005 showed that for over ten years London had been the centre of Islamic radicalism in Europe right under the nose of the British government that had lived in denial. London was the hub of European terror networks.

Multiple Islamist publications spouting hatred for the west were produced in London. London banks were used for fund-raising to support terrorism, funnelling money to terrorist organisations. Terrorists that were wanted in foreign countries were given asylum in the UK and allowed to preach hatred. Extremist groups, like Hizb ut-Tahrir, that were banned in European and foreign countries were allowed legal status in Britain. Radicals such as Abu Qatada, Omar Bakri Mohammed, Abu Hamza and Mohammed al-Massari were allowed to preach violence and recruit new members without restrictions. UK-based terrorists were found to be responsible for terrorist attacks in America, Israel and many other countries.

The ‘tolerant’ society created by politically correct liberals have allowed incredible latitude to Islamic extremists while clamping down on Christians for the slightest ‘offence’. In February 2006, under Home Secretary Jack Straw, Muslims demonstrating outside the Danish embassy in Knightsbridge were allowed to call for bombings and beheadings while the police looked on. Placards called for killings and directly threatened the peace of the country; no one was arrested. Instead, a man was cautioned by police for trying to take photographs of a Muslim dressed as a suicide bomber. Even moderate Muslim organisations criticised the police for allowing demonstrators to threaten violence on the streets. The police and the media were more worried about potential Islamophobia.

¹⁴⁰ BBC News on Radio 2, lunchtime 3 February 2017.

The causes of London becoming the centre of jihad

In 2006 there were about 2 million Muslim citizens in Britain; today it is over 3 million.

Loss of cultural Christian identity

The continual erosion of the foundational Christian principles of British society created a vacuum for the rise of a religion that upholds strict ethical values. In every classroom every culture is taught to kids except Christianity and historical British principles. Concern not to offend Muslims have led to such nonsense as banishing piggy banks from banks.

Everywhere the focus is upon immigrant religions and culture instead of historic British Christianity. Thus many town councils have banned Christmas celebrations, Christmas trees, and Christmas carols, in favour of other religious festivals.

Britain is now a post-Christian culture.

Loss of absolute moral standards

The increasing decadence of British society after WWII was equivalent to committing cultural suicide. Eating itself alive, the establishment gutted the ethical standpoint of British culture and law. It undermined values based on absolute Christian principles, it trashed traditions that help glue society together. In short it helped to create space for Islam to flourish and replace Christianity.

Britain has lost nearly all its foundational moral values that held society together. Codes of behaviour and politeness have vanished in favour of individual's rights – which leads to chaos. The very idea of moral norms is anathema to modern folk, as they supposedly lead to discrimination and prejudice.

This ethical degeneration has led to a debauched society centred on immediate selfish gratification. Families are disintegrating, children become feral, violence proliferates on the streets with knife crimes at unheard of levels, mostly among children.

Modern moral relativism has ended up reversing truth and lies. It then developed victim culture where minorities are victimised by the majority and cannot be held responsible for their crimes. Thus minorities demanded special treatment by the majority and anyone who objects is a bigot or a racist. Crimes of minorities were blamed on the majority. Muslims used this as cover. Western debauchery was an offence to Islam and their aggression against western society was justifiable self-defence.

In this period since the 1960s the left took advantage of these changes. The left hated the values and mores of British society and saw nationalism as an embarrassing anachronism, responsible for racism, colonialism and war (this trend occurred throughout Europe as well). Thus began the unravelling of British culture; entering the European Union was a part of this. Though achieved by a Conservative government under Edward Heath, the enabling of the act to be successful was down to intrigues led by Labour politicians. Gradually, human rights laws were enacted, faith was placed in globalist organisations, like the UN, the International Criminal Court, the European Court of Justice, the World Bank and the IMF. Left-wing globalism was in, nationalism was out. The dismantling of British culture was in full flow.

Majority values and especially Christian values, were not only threatened but were ripped up. Nationalism was viewed as racism; nationalist political parties were termed fascist. As UKIP gained momentum, based originally on elderly shire Conservatives, the left slandered UKIP supporters as racists and fascists.

The left, steeped in philosophies from the 1960s, such as the ideas of Communist Antonio Gramsci, changed their strategy from mobilising the working class to take over society, to subverting western culture and morality in a culture war. Social values were to be removed from any religious absolutes. Such a tactic actually made moral values redundant as they have no connection to any purpose, such as divine law; why should atheists have any moral compass? Thus individualism became dominant. Today young people are concerned only with their rights and not with any ethical responsibility to society. Removing God from morality left mankind with selfishness alone and left society rudderless.

This subversion took place in schools, universities, liberal churches, the judiciary, the police, the legal professions, NGOs and especially the media. The moral beliefs of the majority, based upon ancient Christian traditions, were replaced by the values of those on the margins of society. Islamic radicalism could thrive in this environment; especially as many churches failed to take a stand in condemning what was going on.

Minority groups such as homosexuals or transexuals began to have enormous influence over the whole of society. What was previously viewed as bad behaviour became victim issues where new medical syndromes were invented to excuse delinquency or impoliteness. The Christian foundations of society: family, church and education, fell apart; replaced by human rights laws, me-culture and victim-hood. People are no longer capable of moral distinctions based on behaviour in a morally equivalent society. Immorality in a victim group is excused while valid criticism of rudeness or error is deemed oppressive and unlawful.

Thus a man who opposed a resettlement centre for asylum seekers in his rural town was charged with inciting racial hatred but the deputy leader of the Muslim Parliament of Great Britain was not charged when he praised a potential attack on Downing Street and the PM.

Multiculturalism

In 2000 an influential report by the Runnymede Trust affirmed that there should no longer be, '*a fixed conception of national identity and culture*'. 'Britishness' was racist. Cultural diversity needed to be promoted, by legal means. An increase of black and Asian staff at all employee levels was required; enforced by local and national bureaucrats. The majority British position was to be stamped out by quotas and prosecutions. Government departments, local councils, the police and other bodies now have to comply with laws to give preferential treatment to ethnic and minority candidates and discriminate against white Britons. Over time white Britons were considered by many as 'the enemy'. No longer was the best-qualified person ensured of a job if a minority person was in the running. In this way, many Muslims came to positions of power; especially in politics, the media and local government.

A crazy example is that of the Lake District National Authority which sought to drop its guided walks by volunteer rangers because they were too white and middle class! Just being British became a sin. Calendars picturing pigs were banned from a council office to avoid offending Muslims. Many councils banned Christmas celebrations. Ice creams were banned from the Burger King chain after complaints from Muslims that the whirl design on the lid looked like the word 'Allah'.

While multiculturalism claims to provide equal treatment for all, it does not. The indigenous Christian, British culture is discriminated against. The culture of the majority, the culture of thousands of years, is actively strived against, especially by the left. This is especially true in the field of morality where Christian principles that have stood for centuries have been overturned.

Muslims are actively using the ideas of multiculturalism to first create a separate state within the state, and then take over Britain by stealth. Part of this is using the decline of the white population and actively encouraging Muslims to have many children.

The damage of multiculturalism is most profoundly felt in the education system. Successive governments actively worked to remove Christian idioms and subjects in the curriculum. First the Christian religious assembly was removed. Then British history was censored because it was 'racist and imperialist'. Then Christian morals were turned upside down, especially in the field of sex education where rampant pornographic and debased ideas took over. 'Englishness' was deemed pernicious and teachers who tried to teach English as a prime language were sacked.

Instead of being taught how to think and utilising a classical education, children were subjected to propaganda and brainwashing and taught what to think. Due to multiculturalism, some northern towns have schools where white British kids are outnumbered 100 to one, or where almost all pupils speak a non-English language.

In reality the diversity agenda is an attack on Christianity as part of a global war to destroy the Christian foundations of western societies. In this attack, Islamic ideas are able to gain the upper hand in society, as they will not capitulate one inch of ground. As Christian forms disappear, Muslim principles fill the gap (along with a few other minority faiths). For example the establishment forbids criticism of Muslim practises, such as forced marriage or polygamy, or withdrawing kids from school for long periods to go to Pakistan. Yet any white parent taking a child on holiday in term time because they are poor is threatened with prosecution and a fine.

Immigration waves

Waves of Muslim migration have changed the nature of many British cities, but to affirm that today is to be racist. '*Immigration benefits society*', liberals tell us and 'multiculturalism is a boon'.

Note that in some cities and towns, whole regions have become almost completely Muslim, such as in Bradford, Burnley, Oldham, Luton, Leicester, and parts of London and Birmingham. There are Muslim stores, bookshops, traders, restaurants, cafes, Islamic dress in the streets and the prevailing spoken dialect is not English. If you walk through Small Heath in Birmingham you could easily believe that you were in a foreign country. If you desire a taxi during Eid¹⁴¹ in Birmingham you will wait a long time since the vast majority of taxi drivers are Muslim. This is not multiculturalism to be celebrated, it is a deliberate strategy of Muslims to begin the take-over of British society (jihad) by slow accretion. Sikhs, Hindus, Jains and Buddhists do not create large ghettos and seek to subvert British social infrastructure; indeed they assimilate rather well and prosper within it.

The modern strands of extremism came from two waves: the first was the influx of foreign radicals from North Africa and the Middle East during the 1980s and 1990s. The second was the radicalisation of British Muslims and the growing number of conversions. These had arrived in large numbers in the 1970s and 1980s from Pakistan, Bangladesh and Kashmir. They were brought in as cheap labour to work in northern mill towns. Initially many were gentle Sufis and intended to eventually go back home, but as the cotton

¹⁴¹ Eid: a Muslim festival, (also Id). Eid ul-Fitr: the feast marking the end of the fast of Ramadan. Eid ul-Adha: the festival marking the culmination of the annual pilgrimage to Mecca and commemorating the sacrifice of Abraham.

business faded they found themselves unemployed and turned to the mosques which were preaching Salafism. This, in particular, affected the rising generation of children.

Taking advantage of Common Law and free speech, extremists preached jihad for decades without any let or hindrance. The governments of both sides looked on in ignorance and folly while London became the principle world training ground for Islamist extremists outside Afghanistan and the Middle East.

The Russian-Afghan War

Another factor was the support Britain gave to the Mujahideen in Afghanistan to fight the Russians. This training by the SAS and the provision of weapons, including surface-to-air missiles, gave the Muslims great confidence as conquering jihadis. After defeating the Russians, they turned their attention to the west to put the training we had given them to good use. In the 1980s, secular Afghan tribal leaders warned the Americans, '*You are financing your own assassins*'. Nobody listened.

Around 1989 Islamist exiles from Libya, Algeria, Egypt and elsewhere began turning up in London in large numbers. Many of these had fought the Russians in Afghanistan. Having been expelled from their own countries for extremism, they found a home in Britain. Once here, they began to organise against the west and work for jihad. They recruited Abu Qatada from Afghanistan where he preached in the Finsbury Park mosque. From here came the first fatwa calling for the killing of everyone who was against his ideology.

In 2005 Britain had a net influx of 220,000 immigrants, four times what it was between 1985-1995. Today the net rate is over 300,000 pa.

Why do radical Muslim extremists come to Britain?

- The entry procedures to the country have long been far too lax for decades. No questions were asked; no identify papers were required.
- Especially during the 1980s and 90s, London was the best place for Muslims who had been expelled from their own countries.
- Immigrants were immediately given welfare benefits, including free education, a home, child benefits, living costs and free health care, regardless of their political views, potential security risks or character.
- Even today, of the thousands of asylum-seekers most have no legal entitlement to remain but only a very small number are sent back. Ironically, some people with a moral claim to citizenship (such as ailing old relatives of British citizens) are refused entry.
- The rise of human rights doctrines and law were used to uphold false claims against the state. Any who were refused asylum just disappeared where they are protected in ghettos. Others just claimed that they would be persecuted in their country of origin and were then retained.
- In 2005 the Home Office reported that almost a quarter of all terrorist suspects arrested in Britain since 9/11 had been asylum-seekers.
- Even when the government tried to extradite terrorists the courts refused to allow them if there was a danger of persecution. Rachid Ramda was accused by the French government of financing an attack on a Parisian station in 1995, which killed eight people and wounded 150. Britain granted him asylum in 1992 and requests for his extradition were repeatedly refused. It took ten years and two Home Secretaries to send him to France.

- The authorities are inept, incompetent and fail to take appropriate action against extremists. After the London bombings, which killed over 50 people, the Metropolitan Police deputy assistant commissioner, Brian Paddick, said on television, ‘*As far as I am concerned, Islam and terrorists are two words that do not go together*’. He went on to say that Islam forbids taking an innocent life. Such an incompetent and ignorant person entrusted with the safety of citizens should have been sacked on the spot. For a long time the police would never use the phrase ‘Islamic terrorism’, preferring the more politically correct ‘international terrorism’. In 2005 Metropolitan Police Commissioner, Sir Ian Blair, said, ‘*There is nothing wrong with being an Islamic fundamentalist*’. After the London bombings, Nottingham police handed out green ribbons to express sympathy with Muslims for Islamophobic attacks.
- Multiculturalism. This has transformed the British way of life; it is a trend that is now incipient in all British institutions. It teaches that Britain is no longer the Christian-based society that built it over thousands of years, it is a mix of many cultures that are all equal and no culture predominates. Any attempt to impose historical British values or features are, by definition, racist. Thus immigrants no longer have to assimilate and integrate. Formerly, immigrants, largely from colonies, had a prior loyalty to Britain and were glad to assimilate. This is not the case with Muslims. One must remember that although Britain is a complex mix of ancient Britons, Celts, Angles, Saxons, Normans and Vikings, it has remained stable and homogenous for 1,000 years. The incursions of Irish, French Huguenots and Jews were small scale and shared many cultural idioms. On top of this, Christianity has been the glue that held all together; even the Vikings converted to Christianity. All the foundations of British life were from Christian sources, whether it was law, parliamentary democracy, hospitals, orphanages, education or welfare. Even atheist and Jewish historians affirm this. The claim that Britain has always been a volatile mix of races is a lie. Muslims are able to take advantage of British multiculturalism.

The purpose of Muslim immigrants: conversion of Britain by jihad

You can find many YouTube videos for yourself where individual Muslims will tell you what the purpose of immigrants is – the subjugation of western society by any means, using either persuasion to conversion, or alternatively, violence and rebellion. The point is to establish an Islamic caliphate in Europe, starting in London. The idea that the desire for a world caliphate is limited to ISIS is nonsense; it is the goal of all genuine Muslims.

For example:

One of the goals of immigration is the revival of the duty of jihad and enforcement of their power over the infidels. Immigration and jihad go together. One is the consequence of the other and dependent upon it.¹⁴²

[The Islamic movement] is an organised struggle to change the existing society into an Islamic society based on the Qur’an and the Sunna and make Islam, which is a code for entire life, supreme and dominant, especially in the socio-political spheres.¹⁴³

Rise of cultural Islam

The growing attempt to establish a separate Muslim identity in Britain became more and more intense. It has even led to increasing calls for the official recognition of Sharia Law, or at least Islamic family law. There are constant calls for Sharia Law to function as a

¹⁴² Imam Abu Baseer (a supporter of al-Qaeda). Quoted in Reuven Paz; ‘Middle Eastern Islamism in the European Arena’, *MERIA*, vol. 6, no. 3, (September 2002).

¹⁴³ Sayed Maududi; The Islamic Foundation (Leicester) declaration, (1982).

separate legal system for Muslim ghettos in urban areas. A Guardian poll of 2005 showed that 61% of British Muslims wanted to be governed by Sharia Law. A further 88% wanted Muslim prayer times included in British schools and workplaces.

There are growing calls for Islamic dress codes, polygamy, Muslim prayer meetings in public places like schools and offices, halal food provided by schools and institutions. No other religious minority calls for such changes to historic British society.

Islam is now the fastest growing main religion. By 2006 the population of Muslims had doubled in ten years through immigration and by producing more children than others. Muslims are now the second largest faith group after Christianity. More people go to a mosque than attend the Church of England with London becoming the most important centre for Islam outside the Middle East.

London is home for some of the most important Muslim research organisations, religious schools and lobby groups. The Arab press groups *Al-Hayat* and *Al-Quds Al Arabi* and the Middle East Broadcasting Company are just some that are based here. *Filisteen al-Muslima* (the journal of the Palestinian terrorist organisation Hamas) is published in Cricklewood. *Al-Sunnah*, a magazine that calls for suicide bombers against the USA is published in London. *Risalat al-Ikbwan*, which calls for terrorist attacks, is published in London.

The development of radical extremist groups

Various radical groups grew up in the early 20th century, which advocated that Islam is in a constant state of war with the world (jihad).

The first was the Tablighi Jamaat in India and Pakistan. This advocated fundamentalist Islam and the separation of Muslims from Kafirs. The second was the Muslim Brotherhood, which appeared in Egypt and from which arose Salafism, which equates to Saudi Wahhabism. The third was Jamaat al-Islami based in India/Pakistan.

When the leaders of the Muslim Brotherhood were thrown out of Egypt, they fled to Saudi Arabia, which helped develop Wahhabism. This in turn led to the rise of fundamentalism in Pakistan. From Pakistan, Salafism travelled to Dewsbury, Luton and London. The British Muslim establishment was gradually taken over by radicals with massive injections of cash from Saudi Arabia helping to promote extremism in every area of society. The lack of any curtailment of this rise of extremism by 'moderate' British Muslims has led to the situation today where terrorism can arise quickly within British cities.

Radical extremist groups in Britain

Terrorists emanating from Britain have committed atrocities in areas such as: Pakistan, Afghanistan, Kenya, Tanzania, Saudi Arabia, Iraq, Israel, Morocco, Russia, Spain and the USA. British terrorists include: Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh, Dhiren Barot, Nadeem Tarmohammed, Qaisar Shaffi, Mohammed Bilal, Richard Reid (the shoe bomber, converted in Brixton), Sajid Badat, Omar Khan Sharif, Asif Mohammed Hanif, and Azahari Husin. These were not all impressionable, ill-educated kids; some of them were university graduates.

The early bombings in the USA were led by people in London. In 1994 Osama bin Laden established a media information office in London, which US intelligence affirmed was a cover for terrorist activities, procurement and funding. Other al-Qaeda organisations included the Committee for Defence of Legitimate Rights. Its leader, Mohammed al-Massari, after having been involved in terrorism in Saudi Arabia, was given indefinite asylum in Britain. This group claimed to be the legitimate voice of al-Qaeda.

The Muslim Brotherhood operates through many subsidiary organisations, including, the Muslim Association of Britain, the Muslim Welfare Trust, Interpal and others.

Ahle Hadith is a Saudi Wahhabist movement, which runs many madrassas and terrorist organisations globally; it has 48 centres in England.

Hizb ut-Tahrir, though banned in many countries as a major threat, has its headquarters in Britain. It calls publicly for an Islamic caliphate and its leader called for the murder of the Prime Minister (John Major) in 1991; no action was taken. The leader, Omar Bakri Mohammed, was on benefits at the time of nearly £300 a week. He affirmed that most of the leadership of the Islamic movement was on benefits.

In 2005 the British government estimated that 16,000 British Muslims were actively engaged in terrorist activity while 3,000 had passed through al-Qaeda training camps. Several thousand were thought to be primed to attack the UK.¹⁴⁴ The situation eleven years later, after much greater immigration, will be far worse.

London is home to the largest collection of Islamist activists and some claim it housed the development of al-Qaeda. Many of Osama bin Laden's fatwas were first published in London. In the 1980s-90s a series of conferences occurred in Britain that brought together radical Islamists from all over the world, which enabled the global jihad project.

In Leicester the Islamic Foundation was set up in 1974 to promote Jamaat al-Islami. This wants to spread Sharia Law over non-Muslims in Britain.

Examples of terrorist attacks emanating from British Muslims

- 1993: Algerian journalist Reda Hussaine came to London to visit mosques to investigate terrorism. He found leaflets claiming killings and assassinations. One killing was of a French diplomat in Algeria; another attack was a hijacking of a plane. The police did nothing; neither did MI5. He reported to the French intelligence service, which affirmed that the British wouldn't listen. Hussaine witnessed young Muslims at the Finsbury Park mosque in the late 1990s being prepared and financed for training in military camps in Afghanistan where they were being trained to return to commit terrorist attacks in Europe.
- 1999/2000: a foiled series of al-Qaeda attacks all led back to London.
- 2001: Richard Reid tried to carry out a suicide attack by detonating a bomb in his shoe on an airliner.
- 2001: Abu Qatada was leading the Spanish, Milan and German al-Qaeda terrorist cells from his base in London.
- 2002: Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh masterminded the kidnap and murder of Daniel Pearl in Pakistan.
- 2003: Mohammed Hanif and Omar Khan Sharif assisted in a suicide bomb attack on a bar in Tel Aviv.
- 2005: the London bombings; ostensibly by home grown Muslims from the north of England.¹⁴⁵

For further details of these events and sources, see Melanie Phillips, '*Londonistan*'.¹⁴⁶

¹⁴⁴ Robert Winnett & David Leppard; Foreign and Commonwealth Office, Home Office paper, 2004. Sunday Times, 10 July 2005.

¹⁴⁵ There are questions of a potential false flag attack here but this is outside the scope of this paper.

Conclusion

Multiple British governments have either been appallingly inept and stupid over many decades or are complicit in developing home-grown Muslim radicalism. In reality, various Home Secretaries ought to be brought to justice and prosecuted for either corruption or incompetence which has led to many deaths and much suffering around the world.

Former Home Secretary David Blunkett later admitted that it took him a long time to comprehend the real nature of the threat of Islam – to destroy the British way of life completely.¹⁴⁷

The eventual reaction to the growing problems caused by immigration, long ignored by the London metropolitan bubble of politicians, was finally expressed by the public in the Brexit vote on the 23 June 2015. However, this has yet to be worked through. Though there is now better action to prevent Muslim terrorism, dealing with the problem of home-grown jihadism (including potential terrorism) amongst the 3.5 million British Muslims has not even started. The problem is basic Islamic teaching of jihad, not radicalised individuals.

Questions for western liberals defending Islam

What do you know about Islam?

Most left-wing liberals that ardently defend Islam and attack all critics as racists actually know very little about Islam. They believe the deliberate lie that Islam is a religion of peace and the other lie that Muslims are tolerant and want to integrate within British society. A simple reading of the Qur'an or some of the Hadith, or even reading Medieval European history would show that this is nonsense.

Do you understand that there is no such thing as a moderate Muslim?

The ignorance of liberals about Islam means that they ignore the teaching of Islam, and even the modern claims of many Muslim representatives, that there is only one Islam – the Islam of jihad, and that 'moderate Islam' is a lie.

Why do you criticise temporary bans on immigration for security reasons?

Left-wing liberals have recently protested in large numbers worldwide in response to President Trump's moderate 90-day ban from a few unstable countries, calling him a racist and Islamophobe. His action was because multiple acts of terrorism, massacres, murders, and unrest have been performed by Muslim immigrants from those countries and a temporary ban is to give time to develop new policies.¹⁴⁸ Why his policy is shocking is a surprise since it was an election campaign promise, which over 55% of American people voted for.

Firstly, this socialist protest is hypocritical as Democrat Obama did exactly the same thing in 2011 for longer but nobody protested at all. In fact, several presidents have done this: Ronald Reagan restricted immigration five times; GHW Bush did so once; Bill Clinton did so twelve times; GW Bush did so six times; Barack Obama did so 19 times – no one

¹⁴⁶ I do not accept all of Melanie's arguments and conclusions but her historic description of the rise of British Islamism is superb.

¹⁴⁷ Quoted in Melanie Phillips, p98.

¹⁴⁸ At least 20 terrorists came from those seven countries to the US in the last decade or so.

complained. Such presidential action is in total compliance with US law, which gives the president this power.¹⁴⁹

Secondly, crying for banned Muslims entering the US is crocodile tears since many Muslim countries ban westerners, and especially Jews, from their states; this includes: Algeria, Bangladesh, Brunei, Iran, Iraq, Kuwait, Lebanon, Libya, Malaysia, Oman, Pakistan, Saudi Arabia, Sudan, Syria, UAE, and Yemen. Even tourists are banned from Saudi Arabia. These have banned people for decades but no one protested.

Why is the west berated for not taking enough Muslim migrants (even though it has taken in millions)¹⁵⁰ when rich Muslim countries have taken in NO refugees? This includes Saudi Arabia (which has air-conditioned camps able to house 3 million people standing empty), UAE, Qatar, Kuwait and Bahrain.

Why is migration to Western Europe a better solution for refugees than setting up safe-havens near their own homes; e.g. in the Middle East?

Trump is not alone; polls show that the west is waking up, becoming more conservative and realistic and opposing uncontrolled Muslim immigration; even though the political establishment is trying to stop this. Two senior Swedish police officers have stood up to affirm that the massive rise in rioting, murder, rape, assault, burglary, criminal damage, attacks on police officers, fraud etc. are being committed by Muslim immigrants. One has been labelled a racist for telling the truth but the public appreciated it so much that his office was deluged with flowers. The mainstream media was prevented from showing this but images appeared on social media. The suffering public in Sweden, France, Germany and Greece have had enough of Muslim based crime.

Why do you affirm that Islam is tolerant and peaceful?

Liberals aver that Islam is a religion of peace and in many ways more enlightened than western bigotry. They insist that Muslims can live compatibly in the west.

If this is true, why do eleven Muslim countries execute homosexuals? Why do the majority of western Muslims think that homosexuality is a crime? Why do Muslim countries detain and threaten LGBT tourists? Why does Islam endorse raping non-Muslim women and young boys?¹⁵¹

There is a jihad terrorist attack somewhere on earth almost every day, often against other Muslims (see history later). Why do leftists not protest this? If Islam is peaceful, why did Muslims kill several people over a Danish cartoon? Why did a Muslim drive a truck into crowds in Nice? Why have Muslim immigrants committed mass rapes, thefts, violent attacks, and murder in German, France and Sweden, making some regions 'no-go areas' for citizens?

Why have leftists and Muslims recently threatened to kill commentators that charge Islam with hatred? How is this tolerant and peaceful?

Why did supposedly democratic left-wingers in America threaten to kill President Trump (a felony by the way), slander his name, slander his family (including his ten-year old son)

¹⁴⁹ Note that the unelected San Francisco left-wing judges that overruled this executive order actually broke the law.

¹⁵⁰ Germany alone has taken in over one million.

¹⁵¹ Note, 'the rape game' (*Taharrush Gamea*). Note 'boy play' (*bacha bazi*).

and even threaten to blow up the White House for supposed Islamophobia and racism? How is it tolerant for Muslims to call for a massacre of those who insult Islam?¹⁵²

How do liberals explain away the 109 passages in the Koran calling for Muslims to kill, behead, crucify and mutilate non-Muslims?

Why do the police constantly discover caches of military-grade weaponry in European mosques?

Why do multiple statistics show that many western Muslims support terrorism and want to subvert Britain to make it a Sharia Law caliphate?

Why has there never been a popular Muslim peace-movement? Why are Muslim defectors killed and considered the worst of all sinners? Why are Muslims that have abandoned Islamic politics scared to talk about it?

Why are most victims of jihad terrorism other Muslims if, as liberals claim, jihad is a response to western foreign policy?

Why do liberals defend Islamic dress codes for women, which many women deem as oppressive and demeaning, when Islamic countries ban western women from wearing swimming costumes considered as normal in the west, or short skirts and such-like?

Why do liberals support Muslims that treat women like dirt and beat them or even kill them? How can you defend Muslim nations imprisoning women that report a rape and threaten to stone them for fornication; even western visitors? How can you support Muslim nations that behead women in public for minor infringements of civil or domestic law? How can you defend Muslims that throw acid in the face of a young girl for just looking at a boy? How can you support and finance terrorist groups that behead children and video it?¹⁵³

Why the bleating and chest-thumping about the Crusades?

Why do liberals constantly moan about the Crusades as being a cause for Muslim animosity and an example of western Christian aggression when they were defensive expeditions against very brutal Islamic tyranny and expansion into Christian empires (see appendix).

Why do liberals ignore history and especially the history of hundreds of battles, invasions, massacres, mutilations, tortures, rape and slavery by Muslims over 1400 years (see history)?

Why are some of the worst murdering Islamic rulers in history ignored in western education, such as Tamerlane (see history)?

Why is there a focus upon the Jewish Holocaust but the holocaust of millions of Christians, millions of Hindus and millions of Buddhists, at the hands of Muslims, ignored? Between 270 and 800 million people were killed by Muslims over 1400 years.

¹⁵² As evidenced in multiple chants, cries and placards by Muslim demonstrators.

¹⁵³ America and NATO has funded and resourced the al-Zinki group in Syria, which tormented and then beheaded a 10/12-year old Palestinian boy with a kitchen knife, and then celebrated. Even worse was that the child was sick, (captured from a hospital). This was filmed and uploaded.

Why accuse critics of your position as racists?

Why are those who criticise Islam called 'racists' when Islam is not a race but a religion?

Why was the term 'Islamophobia' invented? Why should not all religions be treated with equal dignity?

Why is Islam favoured for protective treatment as a religion in the west when it actually threatens, persecutes and kills those of other religions; even those than grew out of Islam (such as Baha'i)?

Why do you berate the West?

If the west is so evil, bigoted and oppressive towards Muslims, why do 50 million Muslims choose to live in the west (3.5 million live in the UK alone)?

If Muslims are content to live peacefully and integrate in the west, why do they take full benefit of the welfare state and then turn round to commit terrorist atrocities against that same state?

If Muslims integrate into the west, why then do they create ghettos in large urban areas when they have sufficient numbers? Why do they then demand that the host society changes and adopts their laws, their languages, their education, their festivals, their customs etc?

If Muslims integrate in western society why has Luton become a Muslim ghetto where Christians cannot walk down the street without being threatened, harassed, abused and have eggs thrown at them?¹⁵⁴ If Muslims integrate why did Muslims in Luton repeatedly state that they had, '*taken over*' Luton and planned to, '*take over the entire country*'? How is planning to take over the country and make it Muslim, integrating into western Christian culture?

Why do feminists support Islam?

You can find videos of female Social Justice Warriors and feminists protesting to defend Islam, screaming abuse at right-wing conservatives, crying and wailing for the plight of migrants while sat on the pavement, verbally abusing (or even violently attacking) critics of Islam and so on. While proclaiming that they campaign for liberty and free expression, they react very badly, even with violence, to right-wing freedom of expression. At Berkley University, California, recently conservative women were attacked and even had pepper spray squirted into their eyes.

Do not feminists know that Islam is the most misogynistic religion on earth? Do they have no idea about the legalised suppression, oppression and violence conducted towards women in Salafist societies? Do they have no clue that rape is endorsed in the Qur'an and Hadith in pursuit of jihad? Do they know nothing about the hundreds of thousands of women captured and sold as sex-slaves by Muslims throughout history? Have they no comprehension of the legalised flogging, stoning and beheading of women in Salafist countries? Don't they know that women cannot even drive a car in Saudi Arabia?

¹⁵⁴ You can see a YouTube video of Christian activists peacefully walking through Luton handing out leaflets only for them to be attacked.

Potted biography of Muhammad

Introduction

Why Muslims need to know about Muhammad

Every Muslim's goal is to imitate Muhammad. If you do not understand Muhammad you cannot understand Islam at all. Islam is following what Muhammad said and did. What determines the behaviour of Muslims are the precedents and models set by Muhammad; he is the pattern of Islamic ethics; thus the Qur'an commands followers to copy Muhammad 91 times. Worshipping Allah is insufficient to be a Muslim; what is necessary is to worship Allah like Muhammad did. Thus the Qur'an tells a believer to pray but only the Hadith teaches you how to pray like Muhammad.

The source materials for the authoritative life of Muhammad are: 1) the Sira, which is over 800 pages of fine print; 2) the Hadith (thousands of traditions of Muhammad). Muhammad's way of worshipping Allah is called The *Sunna* ('the Way'), and this refers to the Sira and the Hadith.

Muhammad lived from c.570–632 and was born in Mecca. Islam dates from the last ten years of his life.

Muhammad's life can be broken down into three sections: 1) his early secular life; 2) his public prophetic life; 3) his political / warrior life.

Early life

Situation in Arabia

The religious situation in Muhammad's time was the old Semitic worship of various gods at various shrines. Some held to a high god called Allah. Some regarded the old gods as angels who could intercede for men with the supreme god. The *Ka'ba* in Mecca was already an ancient pilgrimage centre.

Arabs were members of various tribes who centred upon human existence more than divine power. However, there was a widespread belief in Fate; not as something to be worshipped but a power that arranged the course of life.

Some of the tribes had become Christian and there were also Jewish communities in Medina and elsewhere. Some Jewish and Christian ideas found their way into Arab thought and religion.

Islam developed in cities, not among Arab nomads. Mecca had gained the monopoly of trade on the route between the Indian Ocean and the Mediterranean, mostly using camel caravans. Thus Mecca became wealthy and full of merchants, but there were also social tensions in the city, especially amongst the young.

His business life

Muhammad was of the Quraysh tribe, born in Mecca, Arabia. His father, Abd'allah (Abdullah – 'slave of Allah'), was a younger son of Abd 'al-Motalleb. Abdullah died while Muhammad's mother was pregnant, leaving a widow and his infant son Muhammad in very poor circumstances, consisting of five camels and one female Ethiopian slave. When

Muhammad was five his mother died. There is a tradition that Muhammad suffered from fits in his early life.

Muhammad was then raised as an orphan by his grandfather Abd 'al-Motalleb, who then died leaving Muhammad in the care of his uncle, Abu Talib. He was trained in the family business as a merchant but gained financial security at 25 when he married a wealthy widow called Khadija, who was a distant cousin and a businesswoman. They had six children, two sons died in childhood.

He had been a caravan leader employed by Khadija, but through marriage he became rich and a respected person in Mecca. Muhammad was engaged in trading with Syria where he came into contact with many Jews and Christians (Syria was then a Christian nation).

Aged 40 and dissatisfied with materialism he became solitary, spending whole months in the desert contemplating, being especially concerned about the current polytheistic idolatry and religious corruption; thus he strongly affirmed monotheism. It was here that he states that he saw the angel Gabriel who dictated the Qur'an while he was in a cave.

His prophetic life

Revelations

In c.610 AD (aged about 40) in Mecca, Muhammad received the first of a series of visionary revelations which became the doctrinal and legislative basis of Islam and were later written down as the Qur'an. The first visions and voices came in the month of Ramadan given by the angel Gabriel.

At first his private preaching centred upon the resurrection of the dead and the final judgment as he carefully sought to convince his family of the new doctrine in the month of Ramadan. His first convert was his wife. A number of significant people followed Muhammad and after three years he had six chief companions and a few other disciples.

After sharing the revelations with his wife and family, he began to publicly proclaim these visions in the streets of Mecca, which was the centre for religious pilgrimage in Western Arabia. At that time most Arabs followed a variety of polytheistic pagan religions with Allah as the supreme god, but there were also Christians, Jews, Zoroastrians, Sabians¹⁵⁵ and other formal religions, all of which were tolerated.

In his early preaching days on the edge of Mecca, a group from the Quraysh tribe mocked them and a fight began. A convert called Saad picked up the jawbone of a camel and attacked one of the mockers, causing blood to flow. This was the first blood shed in jihad. The Meccans had always tolerated new religions and tolerated Muhammad until he began to condemn them to hell if they did not convert. He strongly condemned their rituals, their pagan religions, their civilisation, their gods and their worship. Initially, Muhammad was protected by his uncle. The tribal leaders even tried to negotiate with Muhammad, who refused to co-operate. Then they demanded miracles to prove that he truly was a prophet; again Muhammad refused saying that he was just a messenger of the truth.

At one point in the growing conflict Muhammad decided to adopt three gods of the Quraysh as mediators to intercede with Allah, which delighted the Meccans; it seemed to be a syncretistic compromise. However, Muhammad then realised that he was wrong; the

¹⁵⁵ An ancient Arabic tribe living in Yemen. Sabea has been connected with the Biblical Sheba.

Meccan gods could not be part of Islam and Satan had made him say these words; Muhammad had to retract them. This is described in the Qur'an as the 'satanic verses'.

The new doctrine worried the merchant class, as the town became full of disharmony and hostility. Fearing the economic repercussions of the preaching against the pagan deities worshipped by pilgrims at Mecca's central shrine, the *Ka'ba*,¹⁵⁶ the leading merchant families persecuted Muhammad and his followers and imposed an economic boycott on his clan. Some followers fled to Ethiopia, others to Yathrib. However, note that no Muslim had been killed and any violence was little more than a brawl. Persecution had mostly been in the form of insults, mocking and throwing dust.

The Hejira

Also 'Hegira' or 'Hijra', i.e. exodus or migration; from Arabic *hijra* 'departure', from *hajara* 'emigrate'.

In about 620 (some say 622, 'the year of mourning') first Abu Talib died followed soon after by his wife. Muhammad thus lost his clan protection and had to use deception to escape a conspiracy to kill him at Mecca. He left the city to settle about 445 kilometres north at Yathrib (a ten-day journey) with his small group of supporters numbering about 70 men and their families. This town came to be known as Medina (from *madinat al-nabi*, 'the city of the prophet'). Yathrib was originally half Jewish and half Arab, with the Jews being the wealthy class of farmers and craftsmen.

This relocation is called the Hejira and it marked the consolidation of the first Muslim community and the beginning of Islam; in fact, the Muslim era is reckoned from this date [AH – anno hejira], e.g. 'the second century of the Hejira'.¹⁵⁷ In Medina, Muhammad built the first mosque. The Muslim community (*umma*) originally consisted of the Quraysh immigrants from Mecca and the Ansars of Medina but from the beginning there was one set of laws for Muslims and another for kafirs. Muslims were friends with other Muslims but enemies of kafirs.

The Hejira also marks the division between the emphasis upon prophecy and revelation in Muhammad's life, to the period of consolidation as a political manipulator and conquering warrior.

The inhabitants of Medina were divided into two opposing parties, but most of the Arabs accepted Muhammad's teaching, hoping that he would heal the division. In fact there were three tribes of Jews, that had assimilated into Arabic culture, and two tribes of Arabs. They were also ready for a messiah figure. The wealthy and influential Jewish community was initially associated with Muhammad's federation but they refused him as a prophet; therefore, Muhammad expelled two clans from Medina and executed a third clan, beheading 800 people. At that time he had little contact with Christians. Muhammad was now the religious and political leader of the city.

It is noteworthy that when Muhammad's situation was weak, facing a greater opposition, he promoted tolerance and pacifism but when he gained the upper hand he started to teach violent attacks on idolaters and that true faith came by the sword. The first passage of the

¹⁵⁶ A cube-like stone building housing 360 icons and idols, including a picture of Jesus and Mary. The Quraysh tribe was the overseer of the Ka'ba and supervised pilgrimages.

¹⁵⁷ To convert AH dates to AD, add 622 and deduct 3 for each century (to express the difference between lunar and solar years).

Qur'an permitting violent defence is the 22nd chapter; after which, a great number followed. Medina is thus the watershed between Islam being a tolerant, spiritual religion and a political system of violent oppression, which is what it was after the rejection of Muhammad by the Jews.

At Medina the religion of Islam began to take shape based upon Muhammad's own practices and beliefs, which coalesced into the five pillars. He also developed legal regulations where Arab customs were unsatisfactory, such as inheritance of wealth.

His followers came to be called Muslims and hostilities began with the pagan Meccans, whom he raided to take reprisals. After a year in Medina Muhammad had about 300 followers, but most were very poor. Raids to steal booty were necessary to provide for his followers. After many raids, and an increase of wealth, more people joined him. Before Islam became violent Muhammad had few followers during 13 years (about 150); after Islam adopted war and oppression the numbers grew exponentially.

His political and warrior life

Within ten years Muhammad rose to become to political leader of virtually all central and western Arabia. The Meccans raised an army to destroy him but he was ultimately victorious.

The first raids

The very first raid was led by Abdullah with eight men. They ambushed an unarmed Quraysh caravan in a sacred month when weapons were not carried. They stole the booty of camels and captured two prisoners; one escaped the rest were killed against all Arab protocols. Muhammad argued that resisting Islam was worse than killing, so the raid was justified; he took a fifth of the spoils. Seven previous raids had been unsuccessful.

After a while, Muhammad went from small raids on caravans to open combat against armies.

Early battles

Badr

After consolidation of the community in Medina Muhammad led his followers into a series of battles. One turning point was the defeat of a much larger force (three times) of Meccans at Badr in 624. Muhammad attacked a large caravan of thirty-forty Quraysh returning from Syria. This was where Arab customs of not killing your own tribesmen was overturned; in Islam brother can kill brother.

Uhud

The Meccans reorganised an army and set out for Medina to destroy Muhammad. A battle was fought in a valley at Uhud. Though Muhammad nearly won, in the end the Muslims were defeated and he was slightly wounded. However, the Meccans did not press their advantage and an agreement was struck.

Assassination

Several tribes allied together against Muhammad under Sufyan Ibn Khalid. Muhammad despatched an assassin, Abdullah, to kill him and wreck the alliance. Abdullah beheaded Sufyan and gave the head to Muhammad.

Mecca

Mecca capitulated in 628 when it signed the diplomatic treaty of al-Hudaybiya to allow Muhammad and a large company to enter the city on pilgrimage for ten years of peace. In 630 the treaty was rescinded when Muhammad arrived with 10,000 troops and the defence of the city collapsed in 24 hours. This breaking of a peace-treaty and starting a war unexpectedly, catching Mecca unawares, became an important principle of Islam to this day.

Mecca peacefully surrendered the city to Muhammad's greater force. At this point Muhammad was mostly tolerant with defeated enemies seeking to win them over to Islam. Pagan images and symbols were removed from the town and a new age was announced. Even so, Muhammad executed his previous secretary who claimed he had inserted better speech in the Qur'an and who subsequently apostatised; two singing girls who had mocked him in satire; an apostate tax-collector; and a man who had insulted him. Thus ten years after fleeing Mecca, Muhammad returned as its conqueror.

Gradually many tribes joined him until he became de facto head of state of Arabia. The Ka'aba was declared to be the most holy shrine in Islam.

Later battles

Over the next two years, Muhammad strengthened his position as ruler of Arabia and united the tribes into a great army. There were various battles with the Byzantine Empire's forces with victories and massacres secured by his general Khalid ibn al-Walid that secured great riches of spoil. There were also many embassies to surrounding rulers, many of whom became Muslims out of fear of superior forces.

Muta

Muhammad sent an army of 3,000 to Muta near Syria to fight a large army of Byzantines. They fought courageously but were slaughtered.

Hunain

Arab tribes allied against Muhammad to stop his increasing power in Arabia. In this battle against the Hawazin Arabs, the main Muslim force began to retreat but Muhammad gathered his core troops of about 100 men and led the charge, which defeated the enemy.

Tabuk

This was a raid on Byzantine Christians where the people of Tabuk agreed to pay the jizya poll-tax. Muhammad's commander, Khalid, killed a fort's ruler's brother as he inspected cattle outside the ramparts; and captured the ruler, who also agreed to pay the jizya. Muhammad returned to Medina.

After several victories, some Muslims thought that fighting was over and began to sell their weapons. However, Muhammad affirmed that jihad would never cease until the end to time and should be the normal state of affairs.

In a nine-year period Muhammad was personally involved in 27 raids and there were 38 other battles and expeditions. In addition there were many executions and assassinations. Statistically, there was an act of violence every six weeks.

Muhammad died two years after capturing Mecca in 632, having successfully united tribal factions of the Hejaz region into a force that would expand the frontiers of Islam.

Brutality

There was great brutality in Muhammad's raids, pillaging and warfare. We have noted the many beheadings, which are standard in Islam. Muhammad also used torture, including torture to death as well as mass rape. Muhammad engaged in an act of violence every six weeks for nine years, not including assassinations, executions and rapes.

Ishaq 980 describes a raid by Zayd, the sword of Allah. Muhammad sent him against the Fazara tribe, who had injured him in an earlier conflict. After victory, Zayd captured some women. One was an old woman called Umm Qirfa, whose husband he had killed. Zayd tied a rope to each leg and to two camels – and pulled her apart.

Death

Muhammad was buried in Medina in 632. Abu Bakr became caliph, the religious and political ruler. Muhammad's dying words were, '*Let there be neither Jews nor Christian left in Arabia*'. According to Bukhari, '*Muhammad said, "There should not be any other religion than Islam in Arabia" or "Drive the kafirs from Arabia"*'.¹⁵⁸

Muhammad suffered the Arabic shame of having no blood male heir. His only son by the Coptic slave Mary (Miriam) called Ibrahim died young aged 15 months.

Wives

Muhammad had many wives and numerous concubines. Different sources¹⁵⁹ list different wives, numbering 9, 13, 14, 15, 17 or 19. Some women are considered as wives by some but concubines by others. It seems odd that there is confusion about this matter since Muhammad is such an important person within Islam.

- *Khadija bint Khuwaylid* [d. 620; married 595]. A 40-year old wealthy merchant when married to Muhammad. Children: sons Qasim (al-Tahir) and Abd-Allah (al-Tayyib) and four daughters. The slave Zayd ibn Harithah was adopted. Shi'as do not accept the paternity of the first three daughters, only accepting Fatimah.
- *Sawda bint Zam'a* [married 620]. Previously married with five or six sons. Muslim tradition is contradictory regarding the timing of the marriages to Sawda and Aisha. Muhammad was betrothed to Ayesha when he married Sawda. She was at least 65-years old.
- *Ayesha (Aisha) bint Abu Bakr* [611-678; married 620, consummated 623]. Betrothed aged 6; marriage consummated aged 9. She was very scholarly, respected and a source of hundreds of hadith. Muhammad was aged 53 when the marriage was consummated.
- *Hafsa bint Umar* [605-665; married 625]. Custodian of the autograph text of the Qur'an.
- *Zaynab bint Khuzayma* [596-625; married 625]. A war widow. Died 8 months after the marriage aged 30.
- *Hind bint Abi Umayya* (Umm Salama) [597-679; married 626]. A war widow.
- *Zaynab bint Jahsh* [590-643; married 627]. Muhammad's cousin and former wife of his adopted son.

¹⁵⁸ Bukhari, 4. 52. 288; translations vary. Ishaq footnote 1006.

¹⁵⁹ Anas ibn Malik, Al-Tabari, Ibn Ishaq, Ibn Hisham, Ibn Sa'd, Bukhari and others.

- *Rayhana bint Zayd ibn Amr* [married 613 or 627]. Sources differ as to whether she was a concubine or a wife. She was Jewish from the Nadir tribe in Medina who had married a Quraysi. Muhammad beheaded her husband. Initially she refused to marry him but was kept as a sex-slave.
- *Juwayriyya bint al-Harith* [607-670; married 628]. A captive and wife of a slain enemy.
- *Ramia (Ramlah) bint Abi Sufyan (Umm Habiba)* [593-?; married 628]. A widow and daughter of the Quraysh leader; married to reconcile enemies.
- *Safiyya bint Huyely* [612-?; married 628 or 629]. A captive prisoner and daughter of a Jewish tribal leader; her father and husband were killed in battle. Twice married before. Muhammad had also killed her brother, first husband, three uncles and several cousins. Her tribe was banished from Arabia some years later.
- *Maymuna bint al-Harith* [594-680; married 629]. A middle-class widow.
- *Mariyah bint Shamoon al-Quptiya* [629]. An Egyptian Coptic Christian sex-slave who bore Muhammad a son, Ibrahim. Some sources claim that she was only a concubine.
- *Mulaykah bint Kaab* [married 630]. Muhammad's army killed her father. When she found out, she gained a divorce.
- *Fatimah al-Aliya bint Zabyan al-Dahhak* [married 630]. Divorced after a few weeks for eyeing other men. She lived the rest of her life as a dung-collector.
- *Asma bint al-Numan* [married 630]. A Yemeni princess. Divorced before consummation.
- *Amrah bint Yazid* [married prob. 630 or 631]. A Bedouin whom Muhammad divorced when she showed signs of leprosy.

Muhammad had some form of marriage to other women, but most were dissolved before consummation. His disputed wives / concubines include:

- *Al-Jariya* [?]. A domestic slave who became an unofficial concubine.
- *Tukanah al-Quraziya* [?]. A slave from the defeated Qurayza tribe who became an unofficial concubine.
- *Ghaziya (Umm Sharik) bint Jabir*. Married 627 but immediately divorced.
- *Khawia bint Hudhayl* [married 627]. A princess from the Christian Taghlib tribe. Contracted for marriage but she died on her journey to Medina before meeting Muhammad.
- *Layla bint al-Khutaym*. Contracted for marriage in about 627 but the contract was broken off.
- There are about 14 in all. Some dead people are said to be married to Muhammad in heaven, including Mary the mother of Jesus and Moses' sister (renamed 'Kulthum').

Note:

- Two of his wives were Jewesses.
- One was a Christian from Ethiopia. Another Christian was contracted for marriage.
- Several of his wives were young enough to be his granddaughter.
- More than one wife saw her father or husband or both killed by Muhammad.
- Some wives started as sex-slaves.

Character

Like many religious leaders, he was a mix of characters. He was more of a poet than a theologian; he was a great improviser rather than a systematic thinker. He was simple in his tastes and kind to those he loved, but aggressive to those he did not like and held a grudge. To his friends he was generous and genial; in decisions he was often astute. He was a shrewd judge of men and a born leader; but he could be very cruel. He was undeniably very sensual and sexually prolific.

The later traditions give him semi-divine status, but he did not claim these things himself. These include that he was pre-existent, he was the purpose of all creation, and that he was the perfect man – notably these are all attributes of Christ, which became better understood after Islam occupied Syria and other Greek Byzantine Christian areas.

Aggressive

Muhammad was always angry and aggressive, even in his early days as a prophet in Mecca. This was one reason why he was not liked by the Meccans, who eventually persecuted him after his protection vanished when his influential uncle died. After the Hejira Muhammad was even more aggressive.

The aggressive expansion of Islam, which conquered neighbours, stole their possessions and killed or enslaved the population, was merely the expression of Muhammad's aggression.

Intolerant

Arabs had been noted for their tolerance before Islam arose. Mecca, before Muhammad, was a tolerant place noted for hosting 360 religions where no one was attacked for his belief. This all changed after Muhammad rose to power; then Arabia became very intolerant.

Today, if you tell a joke about Muhammad in certain countries you will be executed or lynched. This follows Muhammad. When he conquered Mecca he executed five people who had criticised him earlier. Two of these were dancing girls who had joked about Muhammad in song.

Convenient revelations

It is a simple fact that whenever Muhammad was confronted by personal problems or difficulties, his solution was to have a revelation from 'god' that excused his behaviour. Thus he alone was granted the right to have more than four wives¹⁶⁰ and excused from the normal obligation to spend equal time with them all.¹⁶¹ He was allowed to marry the divorced wife of his adopted son.¹⁶² He was absolved from his oath to have nothing more to do with his concubine Mary.¹⁶³ Only his wives were forced to veil themselves.¹⁶⁴ Only his wives were threatened with double punishment for unchastely.¹⁶⁵ Only his wives were forbidden to remarry after his death¹⁶⁶ – and so on.

¹⁶⁰ Qur'an 33.50.

¹⁶¹ Qur'an 33.51.

¹⁶² Qur'an 33.36-38.

¹⁶³ Qur'an 66.1-5.

¹⁶⁴ Qur'an 33.53.

¹⁶⁵ Qur'an 33.30.

¹⁶⁶ Qur'an 33.53.

Dualism

Muhammad is a confusing character because he is dualistic; he seems to be two opposing characters.

- He is a religious preacher but he is also a warrior-politician.
- We have the man of peace promoting a pure religion yet he is also a brutal, violent fighter demanding submission or death. In the last nine-years of his life he averaged a violent act every six weeks.
- We see a man initially devoted to his first wife for many years, then we see a man who has multiple wives and numerous concubines but also rapes captives.
- We see a man who initially practised toleration of unbelievers, especially Jews and Christians and worked with them in the town council, then we see a man who slaughtered Jews and Christians and demanded that everyone submit to Allah or die on the basis of jihad.
- He loved children and wept when his favourite warrior was killed; yet he laughed heartily when the head of one of his enemies was thrown at his feet.
- Early verses of the Qur'an speak of peace but later Muhammad said that he was never happier than when he had a sword in his hand and waged war. For example: Qur'an 73:10, '*Listen to what they [Kafirs] say with patience and leave them with dignity*'.

Lesser known facts about Muhammad

He was illiterate or semi-literate

Though he wrote down some of what was claimed to be divine revelation, due to his lack of formal education much of the original draft of portions of the Qur'an was hard to read, confused and badly written. It fell to various followers who were more educated to re-write the original draft so that it was readable. In fact, the Qur'an was never written down as a single book during his lifetime; it was always recited. This is rarely mentioned in western Islamic studies.

Despite the various re-edits, some Islamic scholars affirm that one fifth of the Qur'an is still incomprehensible.

The claim that Muhammad was illiterate is not only mentioned by some Muslim scholars but is championed as a miracle in the writing of the Qur'an.¹⁶⁷ Other Muslim scholars deny this completely and affirm that he was not illiterate. They allude to sections of the Hadith which mention that he wrote letters to various people;¹⁶⁸ however, this could mean that someone else wrote down his dictation. In fact, the Qur'an mentions that Muhammad read, was commanded to write down the revelation and used a pen; but this does not prove how literate he was. Though commanded to write, Muhammad never wrote down all of the Qur'an.

The basis of questions of Muhammad's literacy stem from verses in Muslim texts, such as:

Those who follow the apostle, the unlettered [*ummi*] prophet ...

Qur'an 7:157.

¹⁶⁷ This myth developed after castigation by Jews that Muhammad provided no miracles to prove his prophetic status.

¹⁶⁸ Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol 1, Book 3:65, 114; Vol 7, Book 62:88; Vol 7, Book 70:573. Sahih Muslim, Book 16, Hadith 4126; Book 19, Hadith 4382. Sunan Abu Dawud, Book 18, Hadith 2921; Book 19, Hadith 2984; Book 19, Hadith 2993.

... Believe in God and his apostle, the unlettered prophet.
Qur'an 7:158.

It is he who has sent amongst the unlettered an apostle from among themselves ...
Qur'an 62:2.

Now *ummi* is variously translated by opposing factions but 'unlettered' is the best translation. This can mean shades of things from completely illiterate, to unscholarly; some affirm that it means 'Gentiles' (i.e. those without the sacred book).

Some point to the fact that as a businessman he would have needed to read and write; especially as there were no numerals then; numbers were from the alphabet. Others point out that, at that time there were many businessmen who were illiterate; their skills were based upon pragmatic matters. Others mention that even kings and emperors have been illiterate; one English example was William the Conqueror. Thus many Muslims affirm that Muhammad dictated his writings while others wrote them down.

The truth seems to be that he was able to read and write to a degree but was not able to write flowing, intelligible prose. This was why editors were needed to polish up his writings. This was not unusual at the time and even portions of the Bible were written by secretaries.

He was rapist

After the siege of Medina, Muhammad took the most beautiful woman and raped her, setting a precedent for his followers who also raped women, and this precedent continues to this day. Muslims believe it is acceptable to rape kafir women.

He was a paedophile

Muhammad married his third wife Ayesha [611-678] when she was nine-years old, having contracted to marry her when she was six. Her father became caliph on Muhammad's death in 632.

He practised polygamy

Muhammad had at least 19 wives (plus many concubines and sexual conquests). This is way beyond the maximum number of wives (4) that is allowed in Islamic teaching for other people. Muhammad conveniently describes a heavenly revelation that allows for him, especially, to have more wives than his followers.

He was a hypocrite

He limited a man to four wives yet he himself was allowed to have as many as he wanted.

He said that adultery was punishable by stoning (Hadith; lashing in Qur'an) but by definition he committed adultery continually with numerous polygamous wives and concubines, let alone raping captives.

He said that what he dictated in the Qur'an was revelation from God, who does not change, yet many of his early verses in the Qur'an were changed, altered, lost or withdrawn.

He married women whose family he had killed

On more than one occasion Muhammad forcibly married captives after killing father, brothers, uncles or cousins.

He was bloodthirsty

In Medina Muhammad sat all day next to his 12-year old wife as they watched his men behead 800 Jews because they would not believe that he was a true prophet of God.

As a warrior-leader he commanded his men to massacre and mutilate large numbers of people after battles.

He commanded beheading, crucifixion and mutilation for unbelievers who refused to submit to his message.

He demanded violent punishment of people who apostatised from Islam.

He initiated slavery on an industrial scale

One of the features of Muslim conquests throughout history has been the massacres and tortures of large numbers of people on the one hand, plus the slavery of captive virgin girls and children on the other. This began with the practices and teachings of Muhammad, who both had slaves and was a slaver. Islam has about 40 names for slave.

An estimated one million Christians were enslaved, many of them virgin girls sold into sex-slavery. Sultans would take thousands of virgin girls into their harem at a time. Even ordinary troops would have many slaves. After just one battle in India, all Tamerlane's soldiers took strings of 150 girl slaves and much booty.

Legacy

Through his teaching on jihad and his violent example, Muhammad is responsible for the deaths of more than 270 million people over 1400 years. This makes him the biggest mass-murderer in history. He killed half of the world's population of Christians, Hindus and Buddhists.

Comparison with Christ

| Christ | Muhammad |
|---|--|
| Authority | |
| Source of authority for these claims: the Bible. | Sources of authority: the Qur'an, the Sira and the Hadith. |
| Texts were never formally changed by men, except for correction of copying errors. | Texts were changed numerous times, initially by Muhammad and by various editors after his death. |
| Text is self-explanatory. | Texts vary; some are very confused and some are inexplicable. |
| The Bible alone is sufficient for a person to gain salvation. | The Qur'an is insufficient for a person to get to heaven. A Muslim must know all about Muhammad's life and copy him to be a good Muslim. |
| Origins | |
| The Bible explains that he was sent from heaven. | Was a normal human being. |
| He was born of a virgin by the work of the Holy Spirit. | Was a normal human being. |
| Claimed to be God in the flesh. | Claimed to be the last prophet of God. |
| Performed many amazing miracles to prove that he was God. | Performed no miracles at all. |
| Was raised from the dead by the power of God to live eternally. | Died and awaits God's judgment. |
| Made King of Kings to have authority over all things in God's creation. | Was a virtual king of Arabia for a short time. |
| Promised to return in glory to wind up the earth at the end. | Lies in a grave. |
| Testimony to God | |
| Explained that God is one essence but subsists in three Persons: the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. | Said that God is one person. |

| | |
|---|--|
| Said that God's word cannot change. | Said that Allah's word can change and the Qur'an was changed. |
| Said that God was righteous, holy and just. | Said that God was a deceiver. |
| Uniquely explains the being and character of God as different from all other conceptions of God. | Allah was originally a pagan Arab moon god, then the supreme god and was adapted to be the god of Islam. |
| Character | |
| Tolerant with sinners. | Completely intolerant. |
| Slow to anger; long-suffering. | Quick to anger and impatient. |
| Took no pleasure in human deaths. | Enjoyed killing kafirs and laughed when a severed head was thrown at his feet. |
| Was a pure virgin; never married. | Was a polygamist, had concubines and raped prisoners. |
| Never killed anyone but laid down his life for his friends. | Was a ruthless killer and happy when doing it. |
| Was very learned and amazed religious leaders when aged 12. | Was illiterate or nearly so. |
| Lived a spotless, pure, holy, righteous life. | Was an angry, intolerant, liar, deceiver, killer, mutilator, warrior, polygamist, hypocrite, rapist. [This is what the Hadith affirms.] |
| Laws and ethics | |
| Commanded his followers to love their enemies. | Commanded his followers to kill and mutilate their enemies. |
| Said that the greatest love is for a person to lay down their life for their friends. | The greatest service to God is jihad; often used to inflict violence and massacres. |
| Laws based upon character and promote righteousness. | Laws based upon fine details of regulations of legalistic behaviour. |
| Commanded his followers to be peaceful. | Commanded his followers to take up the sword and inflict violence. |
| Commanded his followers to be at peace with their neighbours and to love them. | Waged war with his neighbours, killed them and stole their property; his followers continued in this throughout history. |
| Commanded submission to rulers. | Commanded overthrow of all kafir rulers. |
| All fornication prohibited. | Allows for rape of kafir women. |
| Paedophilia condemned. | Allows for paedophilia. |
| Lying forbidden. | Lying allowed against kafirs. |
| Deception forbidden and stated to emanate from Satan. | Deception allowed against kafirs. |
| Homosexuality forbidden. | Homosexuality forbidden but texts imply that sex with young boys is allowed and is practiced in heaven; it is common amongst Muslims. |
| His laws became the basis of free societies in the west and also for prosperity and technological invention. | His laws led to oppressive societies, slavery, and backward, primitive cultures. |
| His followers freed slaves in the 19 th century. | He endorsed slavery on an industrial scale; especially kafir women sold as sex-slaves. This continues to this day. |
| Christ's laws never change. | Muhammad's laws sometimes changed; such as the early toleration of Jews and sharing government with them changed to killing or banishing them. |
| Evangelism and salvation | |
| Is a witness to Christ and his message. | Is a witness to Muhammad. |
| Is a presentation of Good News that reconciliation with God is possible and forgiveness of sins is available in Christ. | Is a demand to submit to Islam or either be killed or be a second class citizen paying a tax. |
| Salvation is by grace through faith in Christ alone. | Salvation is by human merit, obeying laws and following Muhammad. |
| Rituals resulting from his teaching | |
| Daily informal prayer, conducted according to one's ability and will. | Legalistic prayer five times a day in certain ways, with certain words and in certain postures, facing Mecca. |
| Baptism in water. | No baptism. |
| Celebrating the Lord's Supper. | Multiple fasts, feasts, washings, actions, pilgrimages etc. |
| Meeting with God's people on Sunday. | Meeting in a Mosque on Friday. |
| Sacraments, prayer and gathering never changed (though there are varieties in the mode, such as baptism by immersion, pouring or sprinkling). | Some rituals changed, such as times of prayer or direction of prayer. |

Islamic History

Introduction

Westerners, and especially liberals, are ignorant about the scope of Islamic history, perhaps apart from a few details.¹⁶⁹ If they understood the expansion and character of Islamic empires they would not be so foolish in modern policies, such as allowing unbridled immigration.

Many have speculated why western democracies know so little about this and why many important features are never taught in schools and universities. Some suggest it is caused by self-reproach, self-imposed ignorance, pride, fear, or seeking to cover up the pain of past devastation.

It may be all these things but I suggest one reason is that it is a very complicated subject. The fact that a great world emperor like Tamerlane has been ignored in world history education is unforgivable; but how he fits in with the Mongol Empire formed by Temujin, or the Turkic empire which was springing up, the Arab empire which was fading or the Byzantine empire which was collapsing is little understood by many. Then again the history and development of the fragmented groups of Islam is extremely complicated and hard to understand; few Muslims comprehend the details.

Then how does the Turkic development, culminating in the Ottomans, correspond with the Seljuks or the Arabs? Who were the Turks? Why was Saladin's sultanate not a caliphate? How do the many dynasties fit together? Who were the Mamluks? What's the connection between Mongols, Tartars, Turks and Mughals?

While we can establish broad lines of description of 1400 years of Muslim invasions and empires, the detail within these broad strokes gets incredibly complex. Often world powers gradually coalesced into each other over decades of fighting rather than changing in a single demarcation point of time. Then again, sometimes the world suddenly changed after a single battle at a fixed point in time.¹⁷⁰

It is this complexity which makes Islamic expansion hard to get a grip on; thus many people give up trying. There is even great confusion in the west over simple details about relatively short periods, such as the Crusades, which only lasted 200 years.¹⁷¹

Faced with this difficult task, I will attempt to provide as concise and reasonable a picture of Islamic expansion as I can.

Expansion after the death of Muhammad

The Mediterranean world before Islam

After what is called 'the Fall of the Roman Empire',¹⁷² the Roman Empire had divided into two portions. The west was still Roman but ruled by 'barbarians'. The Vandals had sacked Rome in 455 and Huns had already raided France and Italy, but Rome had been sacked before in 410 by Visigoths, which is when Roman troops withdrew from Britain.

¹⁶⁹ Such as the fall of Constantinople, the Battle of Lepanto and the Battle of Tours.

¹⁷⁰ Such as Tours or Lepanto.

¹⁷¹ The Crusades lasted from 1095-1291; 196 years.

¹⁷² In 476 when Emperor Romulus was defeated by the Germanic commander Odoacer, who ruled Rome as a 'Barbarian'.

So called 'barbarians' had always been involved in the empire, many being soldiers and even generals. 'Barbarian' originally meant someone who did not speak Greek; i.e. foreigner, not a primitive cave-man. In 476, usually taken as the 'Fall', what happened was that the emperor, Romulus Augustulus, was compelled to abdicate by the leader of the Goth barbarian mercenaries, Odoacer.

The real ruler of the western empire from that point was the papacy, and formally recognised as such in the 8th century. The eastern empire had long been politically separate from Rome. This began with Emperor Constantine who moved the capital to Constantinople after 330. Subsequently, in 395, the empire was divided into two administrative halves.

After 476 the German tribes (barbarians) set up their own version of the Roman Empire in the west. They retained Classical culture, speaking Latin and using Roman legal forms; Classical culture did not perish. However, the western empire was much weaker than it had been before. The eastern empire was the Byzantine Empire, a Christian culture, that dominated the Levant, North Africa and the Balkans; the Roman Empire in the east. This was the world that was first attacked by Muslims.

It was not the invasion of German barbarian tribes that destroyed Classical culture. They admired the Romans and adopted their ways, having served within the empire for decades. Classical culture was destroyed by the wave after wave of Islamic conquests, raids and battles that were relentless for century after century.

The early advances post-Muhammad

In the years before he died, Muhammad spent his life killing Jews and kafirs and subjugating their lands. The history of Islam is the continuation of this. This must be noted. The commission of Jesus Christ, through his apostles, was to preach the Gospel and to behave ethically. His apostles all suffered and died doing this. The apostles of Muhammad, the leaders that followed knew him well, did no preaching but took the sword to kill Christians and expand the Islamic empire.

Background

After Muhammad died the leadership of Islam fell to a number of caliph's or 'deputies' of the prophet. These ruled in all aspects of society, with the exception of any prophetic status.

In three stages during 25 years, the Arabs conquered the Middle East, Iran and North Africa. They were enabled to do this so quickly due to the weaknesses of the Byzantine Empire caused by constant wars with Persia (Iran) and later the Black Death plague which killed a third of the population and wrecked the economy, which collapsed by two thirds.

In this 25 years the Classical Empire was shattered by two great losses. The first was the loss of Egypt which was the bread basket of the empire. The second was the loss of Syria which was the intellectual centre of the Mediterranean world. This weakened the east and west empire and strengthened the Islamic world.

Classical Christian culture in the Mediterranean was wrecked by this. What had dominated for most of 600 years, intellectually (e.g. the great libraries), architecturally, ethically, politically, ecclesiastically, was ruined. What remained in Europe was a rump compared to what went before. Muslims destroyed everything about Classical Christian culture that they could. Libraries were burned down; buildings destroyed, millions killed, many tortured and mutilated, vast areas subjugated. The idea that Muslims protected Classical knowledge is a myth.

Furthermore, freedom of movement in the Mediterranean disappeared due to fear of Islamic raiders, pirates and slave traders. At the height of Imperial Rome, a letter could be sent from Rome to North Africa and get there in 24 hours. Communications and trade was mainly by sea. Constantinople harbour could have as many as 500 ships present at any one time. All this stopped after the Muslim advance. For example trade from Italy to France went over the Alps instead of by sea, which was too dangerous. This had a massive effect on communication, commerce and economies. This is an example of Islamic focus upon economic warfare which had begun with Muhammad who attacked caravans to stop trade. As a result of this Europe became poor and this largely led to the Dark Ages.

Islam and the Jews

I have mentioned that initially Muhammad was close to Jews and adopted their histories for his own use in his preaching in Mecca. When the Jews of Medina, who made up half the population, rejected him as a prophet Muhammad turned on them.

Angered by Jewish rejection, Muhammad sought revenge. After a year he gained sufficient political power to attack one of the three Jewish tribes in Medina. He beat them, took all their money and possessions and exiled them.

Soon after that Muhammad attacked the second tribe. After capturing them he took their wealth and exiled them also.

He then attacked the third and strongest Jewish tribe. Upon winning the men were separated from their families and beheaded one-by-one, 800 or 900 men. Jewish children were adopted into Muslim families, the women were sold into slavery.

He then laid siege to Khaybar where Jews were prosperous. Upon their surrender he took all their wealth but then developed the notion of dhimmi and Jews became semi-slaves to make more money, paying the jizya tax. Jewish religion was confined to privacy at home or within a synagogue.

Three years later Umar drove all the Jews out of Arabia according to Muhammad's dying wish. There have been no Jews in Arabia since and hatred of Jews is endemic in Islam.

The Qur'an calls Jews 'rats' and 'apes'.

Later Muslims massacred Jews, such as the killing of 4,000 in one day in Granada, Spain.

Conquest during the first caliphates

Khalid

Muhammad sent Khalid ('the sword of Allah') to wage war in the 7th century. He annihilated the Jazima tribe and won the Battle of Olayis in Iraq, whereupon he cut off so many heads in a dry river bed that it ran with blood. Khalid was also notable for his raping of women. In one case he beheaded a Zoroastrian captain in front of his wife, letting his blood run into the soil; and then raped her in that bloody soil. This set an example for the future. Khalid murdered all Christians found in Aleppo and Antioch.

Abu Bakr –first wave

Abu Bakr was the first caliph, a pope-king [reigned: 632-634]. Most of his three years in power was spent stopping Muslims from apostatising ('the apostate wars'). He was the only one of Muhammad's companions who became caliph and died a natural death.

Islam expanded under Abu Bakr. Nomadic Arab tribes had a history of raiding their neighbours. Abu Bakr realised that he needed to channel this aggression or he could not

keep the unity of the federation. He, therefore, organised raiding expeditions in the direction of Syria and Iraq, chiefly for booty and domestic animals. Due to the weaknesses of the Byzantine and Persian empires (see elsewhere) these raids were very successful. Instead of returning to Medina, they established forward base camps so as to go further afield in the next foray. Governors of the provinces fled and the citizens were given minority status in occupied territories.

- 633: Islam began to invade Babylonia (Iraq) and Syria.
- 634: Gaza sacked and the region devastated.

Umar – second wave

Within ten years of Muhammad's death the Arabs under the second caliph Umar [reigned: 634-644] seized Egypt, Palestine, Syria, Mesopotamia and Iran. The order was as follows:

- 635: Damascus.
- 639: Islam invaded Egypt.
- 640: Jerusalem.
- 641: Cairo.
- 642: Babylonia under the power of Islam.
- 642: Dvin (Armenia) destroyed and 35,000 Christian slaves captured.
- 642: Alexandria.
- 643: Isfahan.
- 643: Tripoli and Carthage destroyed.

Understand that most of these areas were then dominated by Greek culture, with much of it Christian. However, it had become weak and divided, with different forms of Christianity in the main centres: Constantinople (Turkey), Jerusalem, Alexandria (North Africa), Armenia and Syria. Syria, Persia, Egypt and North Africa all fell to Islam within thirty years. Iraq (then Christian) and Mesopotamia were also invaded.

The Greek culture was destroyed. Nations that had been wealthy and sophisticated completely changed. The invaders were not then called Muslims but Arabs or Saracens (which denoted an eastern desert nomad). Villages were burned, churches destroyed, crops were ruined and skilled labourers killed. Major church leaders, like Orthodox Patriarchs, were executed; women were raped, many enslaved and one fifth of the plunder was sent to the caliph.

Umar was killed by a Persian slave.

Uthman – third wave

During the reign of the third Caliph Uthman [reigned: 644-656] the Arab Empire expanded westwards to Tripoli, north to the Taurus and Caucasian Mountains and eastwards to Pakistan and Afghanistan. However, much of Uthman's reign was spent consolidating the empire.

Uthman was of the aristocratic house of Umayya, which had opposed Muhammad for a long time. Uthman was killed by Abu Bakr's grandson over a political dispute and his body thrown on the town dump.

Ali

After the death of the fourth caliph, Ali [reigned: 656-661; Muhammad's cousin and son-in-law] the Muslim community split. The majority came to be known as Sunnis following the Umayyad dynasty of caliphs (661-750) and then the Abbasid dynasty (750-1258).

Thus Ali was primarily concerned with internal politics and was implicated in the killing of Uthman. Aisha, Muhammad's wife, led a rebellion against Ali and Ali was eventually killed, which led to the Sunni-Shi'ite split.

Umayyads (661-750) – growth and adaptation

In 711, 100 years after Islam began, the Arabs entered Spain from North Africa and also crossed the Indus into India. In the attack on Sind 26,000 Hindus died. In Armenia nobles were herded into a church whereupon it was set on fire. In many attacks thousands were captured and sold into slavery. In Ephesus alone 7,000 Christians were enslaved.

In 674 Constantinople was first besieged; in 717 came the second attempt to destroy it.

Advancement into Europe extended as far as Narbonne in France but was halted by Charles Martel near Tours in 732. The Arabs withdrew from France but stayed in Spain for 750 years.

In the east the Umayyad Empire spread north to the Aral Sea and across the Oxus River to Tashkent and eastwards into what is now Pakistan and Afghanistan.

The Umayyad Caliphate was three times larger than the Roman Empire (15 million km²) gaining this territory in only 130 years (the Roman Empire of 5 million km² took 800 years to achieve).

Abbasids (750-1258) – consolidation

In this period Islamic culture flourished and great impetus was given to the development of Islamic law, the Shari'a, for social cohesion. In addition there was theological study and exposition and lexicology of the Qur'an, but there were also the 'foreign sciences' (Greek philosophy, medicine, mathematics and natural science) with many books being translated into Arabic (which later led to the European Renaissance).¹⁷³

During the caliphate of the Abbasids, with the capital in Baghdad, the western territories remained the same but control was extended to the north of India. This vast empire was then divided into a number of independent territories ruled for centuries by a series of Islamic dynasties with Abbasid rule being limited to Iraq.

Some details of this period include 22,000 Christians enslaved in Thessalonica; a massacre of Christians in Seville; and 30,000 churches destroyed in Egypt and Syria. The idea of an Islamic Golden Age is far from the truth. The islands of the Mediterranean were constantly raided and the sea became unsafe for trade. Some Muslim ships reached Scandinavia.

The Abbasid caliphate continued until the Mongol invasion of 1258.

Spain

The Umayyads and then other dynasties ruled in Spain until there was a gradual reconquest by Christian kings, culminating in the fall of Granada in 1492 when the Sultan of Granada surrendered. The famous El Cid was part of this process. Muslims were forced to leave Spain or were executed by the Inquisition. Notions that this was a Golden Age for the

¹⁷³ But it should be remembered that the Muslims burned many non-Islamic books and whole libraries.

Spanish are nonsense; there were continual executions, massacres, slavery and dhimmitude.

This marked the gradual end of the period of Arab jihad.

Barbary Pirates

After the Spanish reconquered Granada from the Moors in 1492, many Moors fled to North Africa. Attacks against Spanish ships forced Spain to attack and seize Oran, Algiers and Tunis.

After 1518 pirates served in the navies of North African sultans and attacked Christian trade routes and raided European coastlines for slaves. By 1587 the raids had become more informal and were more like traditional piracy.

The slave trade (of Christian victims) ensured that the piracy was well funded and this continued for hundreds of years. In the early 17th century there were more than 20,000 captives sold in Algeria alone. Victims mostly came from Sicily and southern European coastal towns, unless they paid tribute to a sultan.

This was stopped by the US Navy in the 19th century after US ships were attacked and crews held for ransom. President Thomas Jefferson's refusal to pay tribute led the First Barbary War (1801). The Barbary States were autonomous provinces of the Ottoman Empire: Tripoli, Algiers, Tunis and the independent state of Morocco. The US defeated the forces of Tripoli in 1805. When Barbary attacks restarted in 1815 the US Navy entered the Second Barbary War and ceased all Barbary piracy against American ships. Sweden had also entered into war with the Barbary States in 1800.

Islamic piracy had dominated the Mediterranean for hundreds of years, damaging trade and hindering the development of coastal settlements; to say nothing of the capturing of a million Christian slaves.

The Mongol invasion

Temujin

In the early 13th century, Temujin gathered together various nomadic Mongol tribes, and led them on a military invasion of China. He then changed his name to Chinggis (Genghis) Khan ('world conqueror').

In 1219 he led 700,000 troops westwards, devastating Bokhara, Samarkand, Afghanistan, Persia (Iran) and the capital of the Seljuk Empire in Turkmenistan. He died in 1227.

His grandson, Hulagu Khan, consolidated the empire and marched on Baghdad with 200,000 Tartars (Mongols & Turks), capturing it in 1258 whereupon they continued killing people for 40 days. The Mongols (Tartars) destroyed the countryside ruining the infrastructure.

Kublai Khan [1216–94], the grandson of Genghis Khan, became Mongol emperor of China. With his brother Mangu (then Mongol Khan) he conquered southern China (1252–9). After Mangu's death in 1259 he completed the conquest of China, founded the Yuan dynasty, and established his capital on the site of the modern Beijing.

The last great Mongol khan (Abu Said, or Bahadur the Brave) died in 1335, creating political confusion and allowing areas to secede, such as the Jalayrid rule in Iraq.

Tamerlane

This general confusion was abruptly stopped by the rise of Tamerlane (see ‘Tamerlane’), a Muslim Mongol leader from Uzbekistan. He sacked Baghdad in 1401 and killed many. [See later, ‘Tamerlane’.]

The Golden Horde

This was the Tartar and Mongol army, led by descendants of Genghis Khan, that overran Asia and parts of Eastern Europe in the 13th century and maintained an empire until around 1500 (so called from the richness of the leader's camp).

Though Tamerlane is included by some in this, in fact he was at odds with it in the north of his kingdom.

The Ottomans (1534-1918)

This history is extremely complex and detailed; this is only a very concise summary.

This marks the period of Turkic jihad. The Turks were originally slave-trading nomads in west Asia that converted to Islam. This fierce nomadic tribe eventually conquered Anatolia and Baghdad and gradually converted to Islam.

Overview

- In 1021 Armenia was devastated.
- In the 1300s Turkic Muslims were in a constant state of war with Christians in Anatolia who were divided.
- By the 1400s Islam invaded Europe
- 1453: Constantinople fell to the Turkic Muslims.
- 1683: Europeans finally united to drive the Turks back to Turkey, aided by superior technology.

Background

The destruction of much agriculture by warfare led to the growth of tribally based pastoral nomadism, especially in Iraq. The greatness of the Abbasid culture in cities in Iraq had shifted to tribal villages in river valleys, which continued until the 20th century.

In the 13th century Anatolia was divided between two states, the Byzantine Empire in the west and the Anatolian Seljuks in the central plateau. The Mongols then defeated the Seljuks in 1243. Constantinople was also reconquered by the Palaeologos dynasty in 1261. Turkish tribes were pushed westwards by the Mongols into Byzantine territory. From the 1260s Anatolia began to slip from Byzantine control to Turkish Anatolian beyliks¹⁷⁴ occupying Byzantine and Seljuk lands. Anatolia was very fragmented at the end of the 13th century with many local rulers, tribal groups and warlords switching sides.

The Ottoman dynasty began with Osman I, descended from a Turkic tribe that had migrated out of Central Asia during the Mongol conquests. Somehow (historic evidence is scarce) he established a principality in Bithynia and led nomadic Turkish groups in raids on Byzantine territories. The Ottoman tribe then developed, not on bloodlines but on expediency, including at least one Greek Christian commander. However, Islam was at the heart of the power, founded upon *gaza* (war) against non-Muslims, though some think that this has been over-emphasised; certainly they were chiefly pragmatic at this time. The

¹⁷⁴ The territory under the jurisdiction of a ‘bey’.

political organisation at this time was tribal and loose, but as they became more successful they adopted Seljuk administration methods.

Ottoman expansion

The Ottoman Turks, whose leaders ('sultans') assumed the title of 'caliph' and crossed into Eastern Europe from Anatolia in the 14th century, eventually occupying most of the Balkans.

The Ottoman invasions of Europe were greatly aided by the devastation of the Black Death¹⁷⁵ after 1347, which hit urban areas hardest. Osman's son, Orhan, began raids into the Balkans from Gallipoli. Soon Thrace was overrun, controlling the communication routes.

Murad I continued to conquer, taking Macedonia and parts of Greece, also raiding Bulgaria and Serbia. Then Serbian, Bulgarian and Albanian lords became vassals. His son, Bayezid I, continued raiding in Serbia and Albania forcing more local princes into vassals and threatened the Hungarian border. Bulgaria ceased to exist becoming Ottoman land (1396). Bayezid was killed by Tamerlane who had advanced into eastern Anatolia. [Note here that two massive Muslim armies fought each other to destruction.]

The Interregnum – a civil war of succession

There followed a civil war between Bayezid's sons, with Mongols attacking towns in Anatolia. The Balkans gained some independence. Mehmed I became victor in 1413 and sought to rejuvenate the empire reorganising the state and imposing some power upon vassals. Fortunately, Tamerlane died in 1405. Future Ottoman leaders gradually overran more and more of the Balkans as far as Dalmatia.¹⁷⁶

Constantinople

In 1453 Mehmed II again laid siege to Constantinople and sacked it. For a thousand years this had been considered as the divinely ordained capital of the Christian Roman Empire; it became the capital of the Muslim Ottoman Empire in the Topkapi Palace, built in 1462.

Iraq

From the 16th century onwards, Iraq was affected by the continuing conflict between the Safavid Empire in Iran and the Ottoman Turks. The Safavids were the first to declare Shi'a as the official religion in Iran and sought to control Iraq. The Ottomans, fearing Shi'a would spread to Anatolia, sought to keep Iraq Sunni. There ensued a series of battles between the Safavids and the Ottomans. Eventually Suleiman [1520-66] conquered Baghdad from the Safavids in 1535. After they regained it in 1623, they were repulsed by Murad IV in 1638. Iraq became part of the Ottoman Empire, which went on to conquer parts of Eastern Europe and almost the whole of the Arab world.

The Ottoman Empire

Over 200 years their empire extended to the Black Sea and spread north-west almost to Vienna and north-east almost to Kiev. In the south the Ottoman's took Egypt, North Africa and the Fertile Crescent.

¹⁷⁵ Perhaps the worst pandemic in human history, which killed up to, 200 million people, sometimes diminishing a population by over a third. It recurred in European and Asiatic history but peaked in Europe between 1346-1353. It was probably a form of bubonic plague carried by the fleas of black rats from Central Asia along the Silk Route.

¹⁷⁶ Dalmatia an ancient region in what is now SW Croatia, comprising mountains and a narrow coastal plain along the Adriatic, together with offshore islands. It once formed part of the Roman province of Illyricum.

In the early 18th century the Mamluks reappeared, seizing territory from the Ottomans and eventually controlling the Tigris and Euphrates valleys. Their rule provided stability and economic revival, including some modernisation programs under Daud [1816-31]. A severe flood and a plague enabled the Ottomans to reassert sovereignty over Iraq ending Mamluk power in 1831.

Decline

Much of this area was lost in the 19th century, and by the First World War was reduced to Eastern Thrace surrounding Istanbul. When the last Ottoman sultan (Muhammad VI) was deposed by Ataturk, the title of caliph went briefly to a cousin and in 1924 the caliphate was abolished.¹⁷⁷

Mughals

The Indian Mughal Empire resulted from the invasion of Tamerlane, who subdued northern India and what is now Pakistan.

The word 'Mughal' derives from the Persian *mughul* meaning 'Mongol'. Thus Mughal, Mongol, Mogul all mean the same but historically they may refer to different people types. Mongols under Temujin were pagans not Muslims. Tartars (Mongols plus Turks) under Tamerlane were Muslim not pagan. Mongols did not originally rule India but Mughals after Tamerlane did.

The Muslim Mughals controlled the whole sub-continent of India from 1556 to the 17th century, as well as Pakistan and Afghanistan. But they gradually lost control of northern India. The last Mughal emperor was deposed by the British in 1858.

Decline

The Arabs were forced out of Western Europe, the Turks out of Eastern Europe and the Mughals (Moguls) out of India by European advances through trade, military expansion and missionary activity. Often the European inroads into the Muslim empire began with the opening up of ocean-borne trade routes, beginning with Vasco da Gama,¹⁷⁸ who disrupted Muslim trade on the East African coast, reaching India in 1498.

The advances of technology developed by the Europeans made it easier to defeat the more primitive arms of Muslims.¹⁷⁹ In fact, many Muslims began to desire the technology that the west had to offer so that there was a growing assimilation of western ideas, laws, education, products and people. Until relatively recently, Arabs in Saudi Arabia performed defecation by digging a hole in the ground and cleaning their hands with salt.

Western education was particularly desirable for Muslim children since Islamic religious leaders would not include western ideas in their curriculum for fear of losing power.

Conversions

Political expansion of territory always proceeded at a faster rate than religious expansion through conversion. The areas where Muslims gained a majority were called Dar al-Islam ('House of Islam'). Eventually the majority of the populations in northern Africa, the

¹⁷⁷ Officially in 1923.

¹⁷⁸ (c.1469–1524), Portuguese explorer. He led the first European expedition round the Cape of Good Hope in 1497, sighting and naming Natal on Christmas Day before crossing the Indian Ocean and arriving in Calicut in 1498. He also established colonies in Mozambique.

¹⁷⁹ Note the difference between quick firing Martini-Henry carbines with the single shot musket used by many Arabs and Indians. However, on occasion, even the British were defeated by Muslim tribes using guerrilla warfare; as in Afghanistan.

Fertile Crescent and Anatolia converted to Islam from Christianity or Zoroastrianism. Missionary efforts took Islam into China and South-East Asia, notably Malaysia and Indonesia, plus parts of mid Africa.

Estimated numbers are as follows (1980s):

- India: 225 million.
- South-East Asia: 135 million.
- The Near East and North Africa: 120 million.
- Non-Arab countries of the Middle East: 90 million.
- Sub Saharan Africa: 95 million.
- Russia and China: 70 million.
- Europe: 7 million.

This is about 700 million people or one sixth of the world's population in the late 1980s. Other sources say that Islam is 20% of global population. The current figure is debated but is between 1.1 and 1.8 billion people.

Shi'a Muslims (mostly Iran and Iraq) comprise about a tenth of the world Muslim population.

The two Golden Ages of Islam

This is supposed to be a time when Christians, Jews and Muslims lived in peace during a flowering of multi-cultural advancements especially in art and architecture. This is false; it was a reign of terror.

The main Islamic Golden Age is the period from the 7th century until the 13th century Mongol sack of Baghdad.

Spain (Andalus)

In the period of Spanish occupation by Moors there were 150 battles fought for hundreds of years. Christians and Jews that were not killed were little more than slaves as dhimmi. There was constant warfare and massacres. Meanwhile there was a constant drain of slavery, especially of Christian women, and more especially of blond women. At one time 3,000 blond Christian women were sold as sex slaves to a single caliph in North Africa. Only an elite cadre of a few rich Jews and Christians had peace.

Thus it was no surprise that when Isabella and Ferdinand waged war on the Moors and eventually defeated them, they threw all Muslims out of Spain. They did not consider this a Golden Age.

Baghdad

There were hundreds of battles fought in this period; there was no peace. Christians were being massacred and sold into slavery with Christian women being sold as sex-slaves. Christians not killed were dhimmis. The translation of Greek and Latin works that survived into the Renaissance was done by Christians. 90% of Classical books were destroyed. The largest library in the world at the time was in India. The conquering general ordered that it must be burned since it was not Muslim therefore the knowledge was false.

Meanwhile Islamic philosophy developed a doctrine whereby the existence of physical laws and the principle of cause and effect were denied (see earlier), which put a halt to intellectual development. Note that faithful Muslims do not get Nobel prizes since they don't believe in cause and effect, the basis of science.

The main internal divisions

Introduction

Islam today is perhaps the most fragmented religion on earth; indeed it has been beset by schisms for centuries. There are those who favour using reason and faith and those who oppose any human logic. There is a dichotomy between those who favour utilising philosophy (including methods from non-Islamic schools) and those who reject it. There are divisions over the source of the caliphate. There is disagreement about what constitutes the genuine text of the Qur'an. There are differences regarding what constitutes a sound hadith, or even whether the whole Hadith has any authentic place. Some groups base their faith on the hadith alone. There are opposing factions regarding Islamic law. There are factions that uphold mystical ideas and many that oppose them. Some sects emphasise predestination while others emphasise human responsibility. There are many groups that are holding out for a Mahdi (messiah), but some do not. There are moderate, radical, fundamentalist, and extremist Muslims. Most Muslims advocate polygamy but some factions are monogamous. There are Islamic systems that have modernised and westernised while others condemn such modernism. The main factions are first the Sunnis (the majority) and then the Shi'ites (or Shi'as). [See 'Key religious sects', earlier.]

The caliphate problem

Within 50 years of the death of Muhammad there was a leadership succession battle.

From the time of Muhammad's death there had been three contending positions regarding the ruler of Islam. The Companions of the Prophet believed in the eligibility of any suitable 'early believer' of the Quraysh tribe. The aristocracy of Mecca wanted to secure the caliphate for the family of Umayya. Finally, the 'legitimists' believed that no election was needed but that Ali, the cousin and son-in-law of Muhammad, had been divinely appointed as his successor.

Kharijīs (Kharijites)

The first schism was during the caliphate of Ali, the fourth and last Orthodox ('rightly-guided') Caliphs. Two leading Companions, supported by Muhammad's widow Aisha, revolted but were beaten at the Battle of the Camel where 10,000 Muslims were killed.

Mu'awiya

Mu'awiya, the Governor of Syria, then marched against Ali to avenge the assassination of Uthman, a kinsman. During the battle Ali agreed to submit the matter to arbitration. This offended many Muslims and stopped supporting Ali. They seceded (*kharaju*) and separated from the main Muslim body becoming the Kharijīs. Over time these fragmented into various sects and were a problem for Muslim authority. Ali continued to dispute the caliphate with Mu'awiya until he was assassinated by a Khariji knife.

The main division of Islam today is between the Sunnis and the Shi'ites.

Sunnīs

These are the majority of Muslims for whom the leadership was centred in the four orthodox Caliphs and then to the Umayyad and Abbasid Caliphates to exercise temporal power.

The House of Umayya ruled from 661-750 with Mu'awiya and his successors ruling for the most part as Arab kings, with little allegiance to Islam. This prospered Shi'ite propaganda, especially amongst Persians seeking to escape Arab domination. There were various insurrections but eventually they enabled the downfall of the Umayyad dynasty. However,

instead of a descendant of Ali, a descendant of Mohammed's uncle Abbas gained the throne. Thus the Abbasid dynasty began. The Shia continued as a secret community with occasional rebellions.

Shi'ites ('the followers of Ali')

Shi'as believed that the prophet's son-in-law (Ali, the fourth orthodox Caliph) was Muhammad's direct successor. The 12th leader (imam) in this line did not die but disappeared retaining authority until his eventual return. Until that return there can be no legitimate leader on earth. Thus for Shi'ites there is no central political world leader but there are Imams (religious leaders).

Numbers are always changing but of about 700 million Muslims in the 1980s, 87 million were Shi'ites.

Only in Iran is Shi'a the official religion. However, there is a majority of Shi'as in Iraq and a majority of the Muslims in Lebanon.

Ali's son Hasan abdicated for a life of hedonism at Medina. The younger brother Husayn did better but was killed by Mu'awiya's son Yazid I (still commemorated by Shi'as). Most Shi'ites gave allegiance to Ali Zayn al-Ahidin, son of Husayn and great-grandson of Muhammad.

Shi'ite power was continually weakened by its weakness of continually fragmenting into various minor sects. These comprise (chiefly):

- The Kaysanis and Hashimis – the Imamate may pass to any child of Ali.
- The Zaydis – the Imamate may pass to any child of Hasan or Husayn. The Imamate means that the Imam is not supernatural but does give authoritative teaching. The Zaydis are the most moderate of the Shi'a and take their name from Husayn's grandson Zayd who rose up against the Umayyad Caliph Hisham and was killed.
- The Twelvers and Isma'ilis – the Imamate passed from father to son in the line of Husayn by a mystical form of transmission of divine light. The Twelvers affirmed that the Imam, by divine infusion, was infallible and sinless. The Isma'ilis (at least some sects) averred that the Imam was a partial incarnation of God. These trace the Imamate not through Zayd but through his brother Muhammad al-Baqir. The Isma'ilis developed an esoteric doctrine that was attractive to many and spawned the Qarmatians, the Fatimid dynasty of Egypt, the Druze of Lebanon, the Nusayris or Alawites of Syria, the Ikhwan al Safa of Basra and the Assassins of Syria and Iraq.

Many Shi'ite sects believed in a messianic figure called the Mahdi,¹⁸⁰ claiming that a certain Imam did not die but would re-emerge at the end.

The chief Shi'a sects today are: the Zaydis of the Yemen, the Twelvers of Persia (Iran) and Iraq, plus the Isma'ilis (or Severners) of India, Syria and East Africa.

There are considerable differences between Sunnis and Shi'ites regarding matters of faith and practice and great hostility between the two.

List of Caliphates

A caliph is the supreme leader in Islamic culture, both of the religious and the political sectors.

¹⁸⁰ Many Sunnis also believe this.

The only two caliphs recognised by both Sunnis and Shi'as are Ali ibn Abi Talib and Hasan ibn Ali; that is the 4th and 5th (for Sunnis) or the first two (Shi'as). The Hadith states that there will only be 12 caliphs, all from the Quraysh tribe.

Rashidun Caliphs (632-661) [The 'Rightly-Guided Caliphs']

- Abu Bakr (father of Aisha, Muhammad's wife).
- Umar ibn al-Khattab (father of Hafsa, Muhammad's wife).
- 'Uthman ibn 'Affan (husband of Muhammad's daughters Ruqayya and later Umm Kulthum).
- 'Ali ibn Abi-Talib (Muhammad's first cousin).

Hasan ibn Ali's Caliphate (661)

- Grandson of Muhammad; abdicated after 6 months.

Umayyad Caliphate (661-750)

- 14 caliphs.

Abbasid Caliphate (750-1517)

- Many caliphs of Baghdad (750-1258). Mongol sack of Baghdad 1258-1261.
- Many caliphs of Cairo (1261-1517).

Ottoman Caliphate (1517-1924)

The Ottoman Turkish Empire lasted from 1299-1923, ending the Byzantine Empire with the Conquest of Constantinople in 1453. It was established by the Turkish tribal leader Osman, but gradually the sultanate was transformed into a transcontinental empire. The height of its long-lasting power was with Suleiman the Magnificent in the 16-17th centuries when it occupied North Africa, the Levant, Anatolia and the Balkans. For 600 years it was the centre of the oriental east-European west divide of the world.

- Selim 1 (1517-1520).
- Suleiman 1 (1520-1566).
- Very many other caliphs.

There are a number of non-ecumenical caliphates.

Ibn al-Zubayr's Caliphate (684-692)

He led a rebellion against the Umayyad's in 684 and was proclaimed a caliph in Mecca but was defeated and killed in 692.

Umayyad caliphs of Cordoba (929-1031)

A Muslim dynasty that ruled the Islamic world from 660 (or 661) to 750 and Moorish Spain 756-1031. The dynasty claimed descent from Umayya, a distant relative of Muhammad.

Fatimid Caliphate (909-1171)

A Shia (Isma'ili) caliphate not recognised by Sunnis.

Almohad Caliphate (1145-1269)

Based in North Africa and Iberia (southern Spain). Not widely recognised.

Sokoto Caliphate (1804-1903)

Based in West Africa, not widely recognised.

Sharifian Caliphate (1924)

An attempt to continue the caliphate by Hussein bin Ali, King of Hejaz and Sharif of Mecca. Driven out by the House of Ibn Saud.

Clearly the Hadith claiming only 12 caliphs has fallen to the ground. Also note the complete lack of unity in historic Islam.

Tribal rulers*Tulunids*

This was a dynasty of Turkic origin [868-905], the first independent dynasty to rule Islamic Egypt and part of Syria. It was a breakaway from the Abbasid dynasty, but the Abbasids regained control in 905.

Hamdanids

This was a Shi'a Muslim Arab dynasty of northern Iraq and Syria lasting from 890-1004, originally descended from a Mesopotamian Christian tribe. They were deposed by the Fatimids.

Ikshidids

This dynasty ruled Egypt from 935-969. They were conquered by the Fatimid army.

Seljuks

This was a Persian Empire lasting from 1037-1194. It was a medieval Turko-Persian empire of Sunni Muslims that stretched from the Hindu Kush to eastern Anatolia and from Central Asia to the Persian Gulf.

Ayyubids

This was a Kurdish Muslim Sultanate that lasted from 1171-1260 founded by Saladin and centred in Egypt.

Mamluks

The word means 'slave' (literally 'property') and refers to the slave boys of the Abbasid caliphs of the Islamic Empire, who were brought up to be Sunni Muslim soldiers in a slave army. These were mostly Turkic peoples that rose from the ranks of soldiers becoming a military knight class in Egypt in the Middle Ages. They seized the sultanate, which became the Mamluk Sultanate (1250-1517) based in Egypt and Syria. They ended the Crusades, driving out the last Crusaders in 1302.

Violence

Islam is a violent, intolerant religion; that is absolutely undeniable. Violence is prescribed in the Qur'an and the history of Islam is a history of death.

The reason for this is that Islam is a reflection of the character of Muhammad who lived a dualistic life (hence the dualism in the Qur'an). While he could be soft-spoken and loved children, he also held grudges, celebrated when captives' heads were thrown at his feet, and acted very violently. Before Muhammad started preaching in Mecca it was a tolerant city hosting over 300 religions peacefully. Indeed, Arabs were then known for their tolerance and hospitality. After Muhammad's success, this was replaced by jihad. In the latter warrior years of his life he oversaw a violent expression of some sort every few weeks.

Goal: global subjugation by force

It is just a plain fact that the history of the spread of Islam into the Middle East, North Africa, Europe and Indonesia is a story of unbridled violence and warfare. This is incontrovertible.

Jihad means that there is a continual war to compel the whole world to embrace Islam or die, or to live under humiliating restrictions as 'dhimmi'.¹⁸¹ Issued with this command, it is the responsibility of all Muslims to work towards subjugating the entire globe to the teachings of Islam; populations must submit or die.

Since Muslims are commanded by the Qur'an to expand their territory to embrace the whole world, violent invasion of other lands is a necessary characteristic of Islam. Note:

'Embrace Islam ... If you accept Islam you will remain in command of your country; but if you refuse my call, you've got to remember that all of your possessions are perishable. My horsemen will appropriate your land, and my prophethood will assume preponderance over your kingship.'

A letter from Mohammed; Saifur Rahman, 'The Sealed Nectar', p227-228.

As a result of the teachings of Islam, the past 1400 years have seen over 800 battles initiated by Muslims. This has resulted in millions of deaths and millions sold into slavery (many Christian women as sex slaves). Islam killed at least 270 million people: 60 million Christians, 80 million Hindus, 10 million Buddhists and 120 million Africans of varying religions.

The Qur'an's commands of violence

Torture is allowed while it recommends cutting off hands and feet, beheading and crucifying kafirs. This is repeated in the Sunna.

Muhammad's example of violence

Muhammad was a military leader who besieged towns, massacred the men, raped the women and enslaved the children. He often rejected offers of surrender and even killed captives. To inspire followers to wage war when they did not feel it was morally acceptable, he promised them slaves and booty and threatened them with hell if they refused.

When the Qurayza Jews remained neutral in the siege of Medina, and killed no one from either side, Muhammad beheaded every male member of the tribe and every woman and child was enslaved, while he raped one of the women.

When Muhammad married Safiya, he first killed her husband and her cousin and tortured her father to death.

Muhammad repeatedly tortured prisoners to death.

Other examples

Saed, one of Muhammad's close friends, ordered the beheading of 800 male Jews.

The worst killer

Historians confirm that Islam is the greatest killer of all time, even worse than Communism, which killed in excess of 50 million. Islam destroyed the Christian states in

¹⁸¹ Non-Muslim citizens of an Islamic state. These had rights as citizens but had certain restrictions and had to pay the Jizya tax. They had less political freedom than Muslims but did have equality of property and contract. Originally only monotheists who had a written scripture (i.e. Jews, Christians and Zoroastrians) could avail themselves of this protected status.

North Africa, Turkey and the Middle East and then wiped out the Zoroastrians in Persia followed by many Hindus in Afghanistan and India. The approximate list of deaths is as follows:

- 60 million Christians killed in the initial jihad conquest of Europe and the Levant.¹⁸²
- 80 million Hindus killed from 1000 to 1525.¹⁸³
- 10 million Buddhists killed.¹⁸⁴
- In Africa alone over 120 million Christians and animists were killed through the last 1400 years.¹⁸⁵
- 270 million dead overall.

However, some historians believe that this is an under-estimate and affirm that Muslims killed 600 million people in India alone. Others affirm that the number is at least 100 million dead Hindus. Muslim invaders appeared in the 8th century and brutalised India for 1200 years, determined to annihilate Hindus. Prof. KS Lal avers that the Hindu population in India decreased by 80 million between 1000-1525.¹⁸⁶ Observations of massacres show that they easily killed 500,000 a year or more; i.e. 600 million overall. Examples include:

- Auranzeb killed 5 million in 20 years.
- Bahmani sultans in central India determined to kill 100,000 every year in South India for 250 years (and these were only a third-rank provincial dynasty).
- Babur killed one million in three years.
- Akbar killed two million in his earlier years.
- Tamerlane (see later) killed one million in one month.
- Qasim killed two million.
- Ghazni Muhammad and Gauri Muhammad killed nearly 30 million during thirty invasions.
- Tipu Sultan killed ten million in South India.
- In Bengal, Muslims killed nearly 30 million.
- Regular incursions by Arabs, Iranians, Turks, Afghans and others killed nearly 50 million.
- Nadir Shah killed 100,000 civilians in one day.
- The list goes on.

India was ravaged by Afghan Muslims from the north and Arab / Turkic Muslims from the west. Terrible murders and tortures were inflicted on Hindus for hundreds of years. Indian artwork shows Muslims hacking children in pieces or crushing people slowly between two great wheels, one spiked. There were widespread rapes in a land where rapes were very uncommon, even though women were bare-breasted. Beheadings were commonplace, there were impalements, slavery was endemic, temples destroyed, villages pillaged or ruined, rivers flowed red and so on. Religious advisors affirmed that to Allah, Hindus were like mud and slaves to Muslims, to be treated as rubbish and killed if they did not convert.

¹⁸² 9 million martyrs. 50 million killed in wars. One million Christian Africans killed in 20th century. See Barrett & Johnson; *World Christian Trends AD 30-AD 2200*, p230; R Moore; *History of Asia Minor*.

¹⁸³ Elst; *Negationism in India*, p34.

¹⁸⁴ Barrett & Johnson; *World Christian Trends AD 30-AD 2200*, p230.

¹⁸⁵ 11 million slaves crossed the Atlantic and 14 million sent to Islamic nations. Collateral deaths equal 95 million. Sowell; *Race and Culture*, p188.

¹⁸⁶ Lal; 'The Growth of the Muslim Population in India'. 1000 AD was the year that Mahmud Ghazni invaded India. 1525 is one year before the battle of Panipat.

The only factors that stopped the continual massacres of Hindus by Muslims, that had continued for hundreds of years, were the valiant struggle by the Sikhs in the Punjab and the Hindu Maratha armies in parts of India in the late 1700s. Finally, British colonial rule, entering into alliances with southern Indian princes, stopped the onslaught of the Muslim invasions. Hindus celebrate this and yet the west continues to castigate the Raj.

Beheadings are normal

Islam's military and political activities routinely included mass beheadings and throat cuttings in public places. More than once generals built piles of severed heads several feet high after battles. Akbar, noted for his later tolerance, had a tower of severed heads of the surrendered army of Hemu after the second battle of Panipat. Nadir Shah made a tower of Hindu skulls killed in Delhi alone. The Mughal founder Babur Babur (1483-1530) raised towers of heads of beheaded captives at Khanua when he defeated Rana Sanga in 1527 and again at Chanderi. Tamerlane did this many times (see later). Campaigns waged against Jews, Christians, Zoroastrians, Buddhists and Hindus for centuries included mass beheadings. Christians who submitted to Muslim rule in Spain in 711 revolted in 713; Toledo was then pillaged and all the Christian nobles had their throats cut.

The lie that Islam is a religion of peace

- There were 548 major battles and many smaller ones against classical (European) civilisations. This does not include many battles in Africa, India, Afghanistan and other places.
- There were 19,000 jihad attacks.
- There were only 12 decades in 1400 years that were jihad free.
- Islam is 91% violence, 9% peace.

The reason for this violent history is found in Islamic doctrine. The violent doctrine of jihad is found in the Qur'an, the Sira and the Hadith. 24% of the Qur'an is devoted to jihad. 67% of the Sira and 21% of the Hadith, totalling 31% of the trilogy. The text devoted to Kafirs is 64% of the Qur'an, 81% of the Sira and 37% of the Hadith, or 60% of the trilogy.

Massacres

Leaders have been butchers while there have been multiple massacres. For example:

- 627: Banu Quraysa tribe massacre of 800 Jews.
- 1011: Cordoba massacre of Jews.
- 1066: Granada massacre of Jews.
- 1033: Fez massacre of Jews.
- 1263: The Mamluk sultan Baybars took Antioch and slaughtered the 16,000 strong garrison then sold the 100,000 inhabitants into slavery.
- 1387: the Isfahan slaughter of 70,000.
- 1398: slaughter of 100,000 Hindu prisoners.
- 1401: 90,000 killed during the sack of Baghdad.
- 1453: Sack of Constantinople.
- 1528: Babur captured the Fortress of Chanderi and slaughtered the population; men, women and children.
- 1739: Nadir (Nader) Shah invades India and kills millions. Dehli was massacred in March 1739 with slaughter continuing for 6 hours, killing at least 20,000.
- 1876: Turks slaughtered 30,000 Bulgarians for resisting Islamic government.
- 1894-96: 300,000 Armenian Christians slaughtered in Turkey in various provinces.

- 1909: 30,000 Armenians killed in Adana, southern Turkey.
- 1915: 1½ million Armenian Christians killed in Turkey.
- 1922: The Turks murdered 150,000 Christians in Smyrna.
- 1971: In Bangladesh, Pakistan's soldiers killed three million Hindus in one year. 200,000 women were raped.
- 1983 onwards: the Sudan genocide.
- 2004: The Beslan (North Ossetia) school massacre. 1,100 people, including 777 children, captured; 385 killed by Muslims.
- 2008: In 1947 Hindus were 10% in Pakistan and 25% in Bangladesh. By 2008 Hindus had decreased to 1% in Pakistan and 10% in Bangladesh.

The fact is that history records hundreds of such massacres; literally hundreds, if not thousands.

Modern jihad

A database of Muslim attacks since 11.9.2001 has been compiled. The database shows, the date, country, city, number killed, number injured and a description of the attack. It shows 19,000 terror attacks as at August 2012; it is now much higher since, especially with the situation in Libya, Syria and Iraq. There is hardly a day goes by when there is not a jihad attack while the concentration of attacks is in Europe.

It is notable that there are more Muslim attacks on other Muslims than there are on kafirs.

The difference between historical jihad and modern jihad is that there is a multitude of attacks that are not state-based. In history the Islamic wars emanated from the caliph; today any individual Muslim can go and commit a terrorist attack in the name of Allah.

Universal violence

It is notable that Muslims will kill everyone outside of their tribe or sect.

Obviously kafirs are to be killed (all non-Muslim people, unless they are dhimmi), but Muslims very often kill other Muslims. Sunnis kill Shi'ites and Shi'ites kill Sunnis. The major parties persecute the minority parties. Then there are religious factions that wage war against political factions, such as the Wahhabis against the Ba'athists. Whole Muslim nations will wage war on other Muslim nations, such as the Iran-Iraq War in the 80s or the current Saudi proxy-war against the Syrian Alawi government (proceeding via multiple Salafist terrorist groups).

The violence of Islam has rarely paused throughout 1400 years of history; most of it, recently, being Muslim against Muslim. Islam is the most vehemently violent religion on earth and is based on hatred of all non-Muslims. That is just a plain religious and historical fact.

A typical example during modern times

This relates to a situation in the 1920s, within the living memory of many of our mothers.

After the First World War, Kamal Ataturk rose to power as head of the military and then the government. He sought the destruction of all kafirs in Turkey while allying with the west to secure mutually beneficial trade deals and business. Thus began the slaughter of Greeks and Christian Armenians.

Smyrna is an example of typical Muslim jihad.

Smyrna was one of the oldest Christian communities in Turkey. In 1922 the city was a fusion of Christian, Armenian, Greek and Mediterranean culture, with a few Muslims. Under Ataturk, the Muslim military entered the city.

Turkish genocide had already killed Armenians in northern Turkey. In fear the Armenian Christians flocked to the harbour which was full of commercial ships and warships from England, America, France and Italy. None of the ships would accept the refugees.

The Turkish army began to loot the Greek and Armenian shops, followed by armed robbery of people. Then the killing began. The Armenian quarter was surrounded and all Muslims commanded to leave the area. The Orthodox Christian leader, Chrysostomos, approached the commander who spat on him and told the troops to 'treat him as he deserves'. Dragging him to a barbers, they pulled out his beard and rubbed dog excrement on him. Then his ear was cut off. They his eyes were cut out and his nose and other ear. His body was dragged into the street in front of French marines forbidden to interfere (heard this before?). The crowd cut off his penis and stuffed it in his mouth.

Panicked refugees tried to get on board ships in the harbour but rope lines were cut and boiling water poured upon them to remain neutral. In the town women were being raped and thrown naked into the street; homes were robbed; men were marched out of the city to be killed. To save ammunition and make less noise, orders were given to kill with swords; many were beheaded. The Armenian quarter was set on fire. The Red Cross warned the British admiral that the Turks were committing 'annihilation'. The press conspired to hide the story completely. Lies were told about Greek and Armenian looting in the first place.

Diaries of French officers told the story of bodies in front of houses (some with entrails exposed), girls kept in rooms for raping, a girl's body was found in a cupboard with her breasts cut off; another girl from the same house was hanging from a lemon tree in the garden. Turkish soldiers could be seen wiping the bloody scimitars on their trousers. One middle-aged man was blinded and his nose cut off and left in the streets facing the oncoming fire.

The newspapers called such reports exaggerations. They said that in a minor uprising, dealt with sensitively by the Turks, 2,000 died. In fact over 190,000 Armenians disappeared.

The Turks were merely carrying out jihad, just as Muslim commanders have done for 1400 years. This is normal jihad.

Slavery

Muhammad's example

Muhammad was a slave-trader as a businessman before his conversion. He also had his own black slaves as well as white sex-slaves. His favourite, whom some traditions claim he married, was a white Coptic Christian called Mariyah (Miriam). He passed around sex-slaves for the sexual pleasure of his companions and as gifts to others. The predatory Muslim migrants that are currently raping white women in the hundreds in Germany,¹⁸⁷ France, Sweden and Britain are only copying the example of their prophet who raped white women.

¹⁸⁷ In Germany alone females as young as 9 and as old as 80 have been raped by migrants. Even a nun was raped. Some have been raped in public; some have been gang-banged and some have been raped unto death (including a young girl) and yet the British news media is virtually silent about this.

He then set the precedent for slave-trading to be used to fund his empire. His strategy was to attack a tribe, kill all the male members until the rest surrendered. These were then given a chance to submit to Allah; if they did not, they were sold into slavery. All the women and children were also sold into slavery. The money gained from selling slaves was then used to enable more jihad. Only kafirs can be enslaved.

Slavery basic to Islam

Islam considers slavery a great good. If you keep a slave long enough they may convert to Islam; if they don't their children will. In any case, it is making a kafir submissive to Allah.

Muslim Arabs were the prime leaders of enslavement in the last 1400 years. Over a million Christians were forced into slavery, perhaps many times this (note how this is usually ignored in the slavery debates).

On one occasion an African caliph demanded a consignment of 3,000 blonde Christian virgins from Spain alone. In Tughlaq one Muslim leader took 180,000 slaves.

There were also co-conspirators with Muslims in the Mediterranean slave trade, most notably the Venetians and the Jews.

There are about 40 words for slave in Islam, this is semantically unusual; English only has one word for slave; possibly two if you include 'bond-servant'. 'Abd' means both a black slave and an African (thus Africans are viewed as slave chattels). A white slave is called a 'mamluk'. There are separate words for a Hindu slave, a child slave, a female slave, and escaped slave and so on.

It is estimated that Islam has enslaved 25 million Africans plus a million Europeans. Our word 'slave' comes from the Slavic people who were the main target group for Muslim slave traders in Eastern Europe. The most expensive slaves in Muslim markets were white women used as sex objects. Black slaves were used for hard manual work and white men for more managerial types of job and some even became army officers.

Whenever slaves were captured there was always the collateral killing of others, such as parents and those defending the village; plus many sick and elderly people would consequently die. Some authorities have stated that ten people had to die to produce one slave, others have said five. In the case of Africa, that means that to gain 25 million slaves, between 125 million and 250 million people were killed as a result.

North African Muslim pirates abducted and enslaved more than a million Europeans from coastal towns between 1530 and 1780 alone. This threat of perpetual raids resulted in the abandonment, throughout southern Europe, of coastal settlements dating back to classical times. People retreated to fortified hilltop positions, with the effect of ruining old irrigated agricultural systems. It also put a stop to sea-borne trade. Thousands of ships were lost to Muslim pirates. This continued until the 19th century.

It is continuing today

Specialists in this field have stated that, statistically, there are more slaves around today than in previous history. Slavery is abundant.

Women brought in from the Philippines to work in Saudi Arabia are treated as slaves. Their passports are taken and they never get back home. Eastern European Muslims have cornered the slave trade in western European nations where young girls are kidnapped to be sold as sex-slaves. Human trafficking is happening on an industrial scale right now in all Muslim nations.

Rape

There has been enough evidence already supplied to show that raping non-Muslim women is simply a matter of course for Muslims. It is just normal. Throughout history all military campaigns included mass rape of women along with killing the men; that is when women were not killed as well.

Some Muslim warrior leaders

Timur 'the Lame' Lenk

Also known as Tamerlane, Tamurlaine, Tambourlaine; Tartar name = Timur (Temur, meaning 'iron') Lenk [1336–1405]; an exceptionally cruel tyrant, worthy of Marlowe's¹⁸⁸ Tambourlaine. He was born in Uzbekistan and was the greatest-ever Asiatic conqueror, though he is little known in the west.

He was the Mongol ruler of Samarkand between 1369–1405. He led a large army of Mongols and Turks (Tartars)¹⁸⁹ between about 1364 and 1405, conquering a large area that included Persia, northern India, Turkey, Iraq, Azerbaijan, Uzbekistan, Afghanistan, Turkmenistan, Tajikistan, Kyrgyzstan, Kazakhstan, Pakistan and Syria, establishing his capital at Samarkand (now in eastern Uzbekistan). He defeated the Ottomans near Ankara in 1402 and was an ancestor of the Mogul dynasty in India. He died during an invasion of China.

Tamerlane was essentially a pragmatist and an opportunist. Religiously, he was from a Sunni tradition but also had Sufi tendencies, with Sufi scholars having prominence in his court; yet he was not averse to utilise the old laws of Genghis Khan. Conversely he also showed signs of following Shi'ite tradition.

Though he was a cruel dictator, he was no hedonist and surrounded himself with wise men and enjoyed debates greatly. He was a skilful strategist and played a very complex form of chess that took his name.

He used violence, not because he was a sadist, but to set an example in warfare. His strategy, which worked, was to so terrify an area by brutality in the first city conquered that following cities just surrendered. His massacres, in the millions, of Muslims as well as kafirs, and of men, women and children, became proverbial. Yet Tamerlane aspired to the title of 'Ghazi' ('warrior of the faith').

- It is estimated, conservatively, that Tamerlane killed over 17 million people. This was then an estimated 5% of the world's population.
- 1383: in Isfizar 2,000 people were piled on top of each other and cemented alive into towers of clay and bricks in the centre of the city.
- 1387: in Isfahan, Persia, 70,000 were slaughtered. The writer Arabshah says, '*Temur ... ordered bloodshed and sacrilege, slaughter and plunder, devastation, burning of crops,*

¹⁸⁸ Marlowe, Christopher [1564–93] English dramatist and poet. As a dramatist he brought a new strength and vitality to blank verse; major works include Tamburlaine the Great (1587–88), Doctor Faustus (c.1590), Edward II (1592), and The Jew of Malta (1592). His work had a significant influence on Shakespeare's early historical plays. Marlowe was killed during a brawl in a tavern.

¹⁸⁹ Tartar (Tatar): a member of the combined forces of central Asian peoples, including Mongols and Turks, who under the leadership of Genghis Khan conquered much of Asia and eastern Europe in the early 13th century, and under Tamerlane (14th century) established an empire with its capital at Samarkand.

women's breasts to be cut off, infants to be destroyed, bodies dismembered, honour to be insulted (rape) ... the cutting sword in the fields of their necks and made their graves in the bellies of wolves and hyenas'.¹⁹⁰ Every man, woman and child was killed. The women and children were taken to a plain outside the city with the children under seven placed apart. These were crushed under the soldiers' horses. The mothers who saw this spectacle were then ridden over also plus seven thousand other children. Tamerlane participated in this crushing to set an example. Each division of the army was commanded to bring back a certain number of heads; those killed were Muslims. 28 towers of 1500 heads were erected.

- 1398: he killed 100,000 Hindu prisoners in one day before advancing on Delhi. The severed heads were used to build a high pyramid.
- He destroyed 700 villages in India. Delhi was so ravaged that it took a hundred years to recover. In one Indian battle he massacred 30,000. Towers were built of severed heads. Some streets were blocked by heaps of the dead.
- 1400: He ordered that 3-4,000 Armenian Christians be buried alive in Sivas, Anatolia, after promising not to shed their blood. Others were drowned with their heads tied between their thighs. 9,000 virgins were carried away into sex-slavery. The city was utterly destroyed.
- 1401: He killed the entire population of Damascus, including fellow Muslims. The people were subjected to all sorts of torture, including new ones invented to cause pain. These included being crushed in a press, slowly scorched over flames suspended by the thumbs, suspended upside down with dust in the nostrils, slowly ripping arms from sockets, pouring powdered ashes into nostrils, mutilations etc.
- In Aleppo, 20,000 heads were severed; massacres continued for four days. All children were slaughtered, their mothers raped in public, including within the Great Mosque. Piles of severed heads were shaped like knolls 15-foot high and 30 in circumference.
- 1401: During the sack of Baghdad 90,000 were killed; their heads were cemented into 120 towers. The Tigris ran red with blood and the air was putrid from rotting corpses.
- 1402: he catapulted the severed heads of Knights Hospitallers into the city in the Battle of Smyrna.
- In Iraq, Tamerlane annihilated the Nestorian and Jacobite Christians. The ruin of Nestorian Christians had a massive impact since they dominated the Silk Route and they had missionaries in the Chinese court. At that time Afghanistan was partly Nestorian Christian but Tamerlane ruined Christianity in that country to this day.

The oppression in India under Tamerlane's son, who destroyed temples and forced conversions, was so bad that Indian women instigated the practice of Suttee, setting themselves on fire, so that they wouldn't be sold as sex slaves by Muslims.

A court writer named Yazdi, in the service of one of Timur's grandsons, stated:

We have a tradition of Muhammad wherein he assures us that he was a child of the sword, and that the most happy moments which he passed with God were when he had the sword in his hand; and he adds that paradise is itself is under the protection of the sword; which demonstrates that kings are not peaceable possessors of the throne.¹⁹¹

¹⁹⁰ Marozzi, p153.

¹⁹¹ Marozzi, p95.

Umar

The second caliph Umar (d. 644) seized Syria (635), Palestine (640), Egypt (641-2.), Mesopotamia and Iran (Persia, 643). His rule was a reign of terror and plunder much like the reign of ISIS today.

Church buildings were destroyed or desecrated. Treasure was taken. Farmland was ruined. Cities were razed to the ground. Ancient civilisations destroyed.

If a Copt¹⁹² spoke Coptic in front of a Muslim, his tongue was cut out. Soon Arabic became the Egyptian language. Everywhere Christian cultures were wiped out and replaced by Arabic culture. Most people do not realise that once North Africa was an important centre of the Christian religion with very famous leaders arising from it such as Athanasius and Augustine.

Here is an account of Umar's commander Muawiya in Cappadocia (Turkey).

Muawiya arrived and ordered all the inhabitants to be put to the sword. He placed guards so that no one escaped. After gathering up all the wealth of the town [Euchaita], they set to torturing the leaders to make them show things that had been hidden. The Taiyaye [Muslims] led everyone into slavery – men and women, boys and girls – and they committed much debauchery in that unfortunate town; they wickedly committed immoralities inside churches. They returned to their country rejoicing.¹⁹³

This follows the normal pattern of Islamic invasion.

Saladin

Arabic name Salah-ad-Din Yusuf ibn-Ayyub; [1137–1193]. Born a Kurd.

Saladin was the Sultan (i.e. 'ruler') of Egypt and Syria between 1174–1193, establishing the Ayyubid dynasty. He invaded the Holy Land and reconquered Jerusalem from the Christians (1187), and, for a period, resisted the Third Crusade, the leaders of which included Richard I, the Lionheart. He was later defeated by Richard at Arsuf (1191) making peace in 1192; and withdrew to Damascus, where he died.

Though a skilful military commander, he is romanticised in history books for his honour and chivalry; though this is now being questioned by revelations of his massacres. The Muslim sources give a much more honest appraisal of his brutality.¹⁹⁴

Mark this: the Muslim leader most noted for his honour committed massacres; his troops raped and pillaged just like other Muslim armies. In his ruthless quest for victory, Saladin would destroy entire regions in the locality of a city to be attacked, killing innocent civilians. He famously stated that he was determined to wipe Christianity out from the Middle East.

He dishonourably killed opponents after promising them safe passage; note the treatment of the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Those who were spared were ransomed; 16,000 that could not pay were sold as slaves; men, women and children. Women were ravaged before enslavement; pretty young virgin girls were married off to officers. Muslim writers celebrated the treatment of women upon victory, especially the rape of aristocrats.

¹⁹² The original Egyptians.

¹⁹³ Michael the Syrian, quoted in Warner, *Political Islam*, Vol 2. p27.

¹⁹⁴ E.g. Gabrieli.

Saladin also hated philosophers, materialists and opponents of Islamic law. A Muslim who had merely spoken against the law in Aleppo was killed and left hanging on a cross for days. This man was a philosopher interested in pre-Islamic Persian wisdom. Saladin was not a tolerant person. Captive Crusader leaders who would not embrace Islam were beheaded in front of him.

Saladin may be slightly better than some Muslim commanders, such as Tamerlane, but he was not the honourable, saintly, tolerant ruler that people believe.

Akbar the Great

Jalaludin Muhammad Akbar (1542–1605), was Mughal (Mogul) emperor of India 1556–1605; known as Akbar the Great. He expanded the Mughal Empire to incorporate northern India and established an efficient but ‘enlightened’ administration, but in his earlier years he was a typical bloodthirsty invader. Thus even a ruler portrayed as ‘enlightened’ and later famous for his tolerance was still a slayer.

In the 16th-17th century Akbar killed 600,000 Hindus. After the fall of Chitod he slaughtered over 30,000 unarmed Hindu peasants at one time. Note that Mughal rulers took the title of ‘Ghazi’, slayer of kafirs.

Cultural destruction

We must also mention the Islamic destruction of culture; this is Sunna.

Wherever it conquers, Islam utterly destroys the previous culture because it is not Islamic. This means the destruction of art, libraries, schools, museums and so forth.

Art is especially hated as an affront to Islam. Muhammad’s first action on taking Mecca was to destroy all the religious art. Paintings have faces defaced, statues have eyes and mouth removed. Churches and temples are burned or destroyed, but the very best big ones were converted into mosques. Greek culture was obliterated in the eastern Mediterranean.

The destruction of Persian Zoroastrianism was so complete that scholars today are uncertain of the true nature of the religion because so few texts and artefacts remain.

Buddhism was annihilated from Afghanistan where it once prevailed. It was obliterated because it was pacifist and prosperous. In Hindustan (India) the Hindus put up a fight because they had a warrior caste, but millions died and others were enslaved. In all the areas along the Silk Route eastwards, cultures were smashed, art destroyed, temples ruined. Note that in Afghanistan the Hindu Kush mountain range carries the meaning of ‘*funeral pyre of the Hindus*’.

Muslims in modern Britain

The historic and sound Islamic position

Throughout history Islam dominated the lands that it conquered for centuries and this posed no problems for Muslims. All the principles of Muhammad could be worked out – war with a nation, conquer it, subdue it under Islam and create dhimmis of the population or kill them. The dhimmis then provide wealth and slaves provide labour.

This no longer works since the caliphate was abolished in 1923, the Ottoman Empire destroyed, dhimmitude abolished and slavery outlawed. Muslim states either capitulated to modern secularism and development (as in Turkey or Syria) or remained backward and primitive. Only the discovery of oil and the development of petroleum-based motors enabled traditionalist countries, like Saudi Arabia, to have a decent economy.

The modern problem for Muslims in the west

For many Muslims living in the west this posed a problem. We have noted that Islam divides the world into *dar al Islam* ('land or abode of submission') and the *dar al harb* ('land of war', the area of the kafir). How does a Muslim stay faithful to Muhammad while living under Christian or secular rule? At what point does violent jihad become necessary in a kafir land?

Quiescent Islam

For a hundred years what has happened on the ground has been that the vast benefits of western Christian society mollified immigrant Muslims by giving them a much better life. Living in London and getting a good job, or even having benefits, was far better than living in a poverty-stricken mud-hut in rural Pakistan. Thus most Muslims became 'moderates', which really means that they are not faithful Muslims at all but apostates. They retained their cultural Islamism but denied jihad.

There have been various reform movements initiated by westernised moderate Muslims, but these were on a slippery slope because the things that needed reforming were specifically commanded by Muhammad in explicit terms (such as demeaning of women, polygamy, sex-slaves, wife beating). Imams ruled out such reforms. Pure Islam cannot change; it has to dominate every area of private and public life.

Even Muslim countries failed Muhammad. First, they developed parliamentary democracies on a western style. Then they adopted many features of western laws, and infrastructure.¹⁹⁵ Then most Muslim nations signed up to the UN Declaration of Human Rights (in fact all except Saudi Arabia and the Yemen), which affirmed a person's right to change his religion – which is directly counter to Islamic law. Islam is theocratic (the state and the religion are one); it cannot function correctly under the rule of a different religion; it must be in perpetual war with kafirs.

For a century Islam was weak and suffered shock from the massive technological, military and cultural advances of the west – but ...

The advance of pure Islam

This dichotomy between true Islam and its suppression in the west has now resulted in a reformation of Islam under multiple jihadi organisations and terrorist groups, many funded by Saudi Arabia and the Gulf States. These call for a return to genuine Islam – jihad and war against the west until the world is a single caliphate. ISIS is but one expression of this.

The two significant events in the 20th century for rejuvenating Islam was, first, the discovery of oil in Saudi Arabia, which gave vast amounts of wealth for Muslim causes and sponsored the development of Salafist Sunni Islam. The second event was the Iranian Revolution which fostered hard-line Shi'ite Islam, also aided by vast oil-reserves.

¹⁹⁵ Note that Turkey under Ataturk stopped teaching Islam in schools, suppressed the Dervishes, secularised the law, introduced the Roman alphabet, and monogamy was enforced.

Furthermore, Turkey now has an Islamic leader and is reintroducing Muslim policies. Iraq is becoming more fundamentalist after the foolish western intervention. Libya is now a failed state becoming more jihadi due to stupid American policies and Syria has been destabilised by the west. Sharia Law already dominated Saudi Arabia and the Gulf States. Indonesia and some African states are becoming more polarised and fundamentalist.

Islam is no longer weak but is on the march – using jihad in all its forms. Islam is at war with western Christian democracies – yet most in the west are oblivious to this fact.

Migration

One of its current methods, already discussed, is the use of migration by committed jihadis. The foolish policy of the EU and other nations has allowed millions of Muslims to emigrate to the west with little or no vetting. It has been confirmed that many of these are radical Islamists determined to undermine the west in any way possible; often while living on western benefits.

The proof of the pudding is in the eating: migrants are causing absolute chaos and devastation wherever they go whether it is Germany, France, Sweden, Britain, America or even Canada. Crimes committed by Muslim migrants are through the roof and some areas have become wastelands for westerners, such as Malmo. Terrorist massacres are becoming commonplace. We have discussed this.

You can find YouTube videos exposing how far the radicalisation of Muslims is going. The television programme Dispatches showed secret filmed video some years ago of teaching in the Regent's Park mosque in London (a supposedly moderate centre). Here young Muslims were taught not to socialise or befriend kafirs; that Muslim apostates must be killed and that Islam was at war with the west. Various videos show Muslims affirming that a jihadi army is slowly being formed that, when it is strong enough, will take over Britain. This is happening right now. Much of this is funded by materials and donations from Saudi Arabia; you can find extremist educational material of this sort in the Regent's Park mosque bookshop. Tens of billions are pumped into supporting jihad in the west by Saudi rulers that are our supposed allies.

Muslims following Muhammad's jihad teaching are actively preparing for a violent overthrow of this country and the government supports them, gives them benefits and homes, and arrests people for Islamophobia who point this danger out. It seems that only when leafy suburbs of affluent areas are dominated by Islamic terrorism will people wake up.

What next?

The best policy is to stop all Muslim immigration of asylum-seekers and establish safe regions nearer the areas they are fleeing (genuine asylum-seekers want this anyway). Stop all free-movement of people by leaving the EU immediately. Beef-up all immigration procedures and finance them properly. Introduce a zero-tolerance policing of criminal behaviour; send criminal immigrants back to their homeland. Publish correct information about Islam so that the host population understands what is at stake.

The alternatives to this are horrific.

Possible outcome

The first possibility is that Muslims will take over their chosen lands. It is a fact that Muslims believe that they have already taken-over certain British towns and cities and are actively planing to dominate all British society and introduce Sharia Law. Their gradual

take-over is eventually assured anyway by the sheer number of their children compared to the dwindling British procreation statistics.

The second possibility (and this is what the global elite have actively planned and cultivated)¹⁹⁶ is a civil war in European nations between Christian-based / atheistic western democrats and immigrant Muslims. Many Muslim factions have long planned for this and have already built up weapons caches hidden in mosques (some have been discovered). Such a war would be welcomed by Muslims because that is jihad. To fight in jihad means to gain righteousness and if you are killed in jihad you go immediately to Paradise. Many Muslim men welcome this possibility.

Events of the last 16 years show that Islamic terrorism is becoming an active feature of Muslim immigrants in the West. If we ignore conspiracy theories of false flags (which involved actual Muslim patsies anyway) we have increasing numbers of jihadi terrorist attacks, of which there have been hundreds since 1980. I list just a short selection since the Paris bomb attacks:

- Nov 2015: The Paris bombings kill 137 and wound 368.
- Nov 2015: A Malaysian national is beheaded in the Philippines.
- Nov 2015: Two soldiers killed and civilians injured in Sarajevo, Bosnia & Herzegovina.
- Nov 2015: Bus bombing kills 12 in Tunis.
- Nov 2015: Attack on hotel in al-Arish, Egypt killing 7 and wounding over 10.
- Nov 2015: Four security personnel killed at police checkpoint in Saqqara, Egypt.
- Dec 2015: Shooter kills 14 in San Bernardino, California.
- Dec 2015: Bomb kills 4, injures 4 in Rafah, Egypt.
- Dec 2015: Car bomb and attack kills 6, injures several in the Spanish Embassy in Kabul.
- Dec 2015: Gunman fires on residents in Dagestan, Russia killing one and injuring 11.
- Jan 2016: Bomb attack in Istanbul kills 10 tourists and injures 15.
- Jan 2016: Car driven at soldiers and man shot in south-eastern France.
- Jan 2016: Attack on a police station in Paris.
- Jan 2016: Machete attack in Marseilles, one injured.
- March 2016: Three bomb attacks in Brussels killing 35 wounding over 300.
- June 2016: Mass shooting at a nightclub in Orlando, Florida killing 49 and wounding 53.
- June 2016: Police officer and his wife stabbed to death in Magnanville, France.
- June 2016: Shootings and suicide bombings in the Ataturk Airport, Istanbul killing 45; injuring 230.
- July 2016: Knife and axe attack of a train near Wurzburg injured 5.
- July 2016: Suicide bomb attack in a wine bar in Ansbach injuring 15.
- July 2016: Truck driven into crowds at Nice killing 86 people injuring 434.
- July 2016: Priest killed and nuns taken hostage in Rouen.
- Nov 2016: Ohio State University attack injuring 11.
- Nov 2016: Truck driven into the Xmas market in Berlin killing 12, injuring 56.

¹⁹⁶ Note that George Soros has actively supported and financed Muslim migration into Europe.

- Jan 2017: Five people shot in an airport in Fort Lauderdale, Florida.
- Jan 2017: Pastor shot in Denver, Colorado.
- Feb 2017: Red Cross convoy attacked in Afghanistan, six killed.
- Feb 2017: Machete attack in the Louvre, Paris.

There have been literally hundreds more all over the world. Jihad is very active today. France has had periods where there was some form of Muslim terrorist attack on a weekly basis. There were 36 terror attacks in France in 2015 alone. In 2012 there were 65. Many of these are not reported in the media.

We can expect such terror attacks in the name of jihad to increase, especially along the lines of immigration. Further unchecked Muslim migration into the EU is not only foolish; it is dangerous.

To this we can add the huge negative influence of Muslim countries on western policy. Chief among these is the domination of American foreign policy by Saudi Arabia, which has bought and corrupted many high-ranking officials. In this it has been (oddly) in league with Israel to destabilise and try to effect regime change in Iraq, Libya and Syria. Lebanon, Yemen and Iran are next. America needs the Saudis to prop up the Petro-Dollar and supply oil; thus it panders to Saudi demands. We shall see if a forthcoming economic collapse and the presidency of Trump affect this negatively.

We also need to expose the fact that Saudi Arabia and the Gulf States, plus other nations, finance and support terrorism of a global scale. Many of the worst attacks on the west were enabled by Saudi Arabia, such as 9/11.

The west is at war and doesn't even realise it.

Abbreviated timeline

| | |
|---------------|---|
| c.570 | Birth of Muhammad. |
| 622 | The Hejira (emigration to Medina). After this Muslim years are denoted as 'AH'. |
| 624 | Battle of Badr, first major Muslim victory. |
| 630 | Last battle led by Muhammad. |
| 632 | Death of Muhammad. |
| 632-634 | Caliphate of Abu Bakr, Muhammad's first successor. |
| 634-644 | Caliphate of 'Umar. |
| 639 | Muslim conquest of Egypt. |
| 644-656 | Caliphate of 'Uthman. |
| c.651 | 'Uthman commissions formal recension of the Qur'an. |
| 656-661 | Caliphate of 'Ali. |
| 661-750 | Umayyad dynasty rules from Damascus. |
| 750-1258 | Abbasid dynasty rules from Baghdad. |
| 756-1037 | Umayyad dynasty in Spain. |
| 820 | Death of al-Shafi'i, founder of the Shi'ite sect. |
| 870 | Death of Bukhari (chief Hadith writer). Muslim, Ibn Maja, Abu Dawud and Tirmidhi also died in the 800s. |
| 878 | 12 th Shi'ite Imam disappeared. |
| 969 | Fatimid conquest of Egypt. |
| 1037-1492 | Moorish dynasties rule in Spain. |
| 1055 | Seljuk Tughril Beg rules in Baghdad. |
| 1095 | Crusades begin. |
| 1099 | Capture of Jerusalem by the Crusaders. |
| 1111 | al-Ghazzali died. |
| 1193 | Death of Saladin. Saladin was the Sultan of Egypt and Syria between 1174–1193. |
| 1254-1517 | Mamluk rule in Egypt. |
| 1258 | The Abbasid caliphate continued until the Mongol invasion of 1258. Mongol Hulagu takes Baghdad. |
| 1401 | Tamerlane sacked Baghdad. |
| 1453 | Fall of Constantinople to the Turks. |
| 1492 | Fall of Granada – end of Moorish occupation of Spain. |
| 1517 | Ottoman sultan, Selim I, assumed title of Caliph. |
| 1683 | Europeans united to drive the Turks back to Turkey. |
| 1792 | Death of Ibn-'Abd-al-Wahhab, founder of Wahhabism. |
| 1858 | End of Muslim Mughal rule in India. |
| 1922 | Last Ottoman sultan deposed by Ataturk. |
| 1923 | Standard edition of the Qur'an published in Cairo. |
| 1924 | Caliphate abolished. |
| 1929 | Muslim Brotherhood founded. |
| 1932 | Islamic Wahhabi kingdom of Saudi Arabia established. The Hejaz and Najd were united by conquest. |
| 1947 | Pakistan founded as a Muslim state. |
| 1969 | Islamic Socialist regime established in Libya by al-Qadhafi. |
| 1979 | Islamic revolutionary regime established in Iran by Ayatollah Khomeini (Shi'ite). |
| 1979 | December: Soviet troops entered Afghanistan. Guerrilla Mujahidin forces, equipped with US arms, then waged a <i>jihad</i> or holy war against government troops armed and supported by Soviet forces. six million refugees fled to Iran and Pakistan. |
| 1989 | Soviet Union army withdrawn from Afghanistan; the pro-Soviet government of Mohammad Najibullah was replaced by an Islamic state. |
| 1995 | Taliban militia, an army of young Islamic militants, gained control of southern Afghanistan, including Kabul, and imposed strict Islamic law. |
| 2001-2014 | Afghan War between NATO and the Taliban. Ends in a stalemate and NATO withdrawal. |
| 2003-2011 | Iraq War; US-led regime change to topple Saddam Hussein. Leads to power vacuum and Muslim on Muslim conflicts. |
| 2011 | Libya collapse: US-led destabilisation to topple Qhadaffi. Leads to rise of IS and internecine conflict. |
| 2011- present | Syrian War. A proxy war by the US using Sunni terrorist invaders to topple the Assad government. |

Some prominent battles of Islam

Listing even just important Islamic battles would be tedious and pointless since there are literally hundreds of them over 1400 years; however some are very significant.

Battle of Badr: 624

This was the first key battle of Islam and marked the turning point for Muhammad's struggle against opponents in the Quraysh tribe in Mecca. It is one of the few battles mentioned in the Qur'an.

Siege of Damascus: 634

This was the first major city of the then great empires (Byzantine and Persian – Sassanid) to fall to the Arabs. It gave the Muslims momentum and an important supply route for further incursions.

Battle of Nahavand: 642

This marked the disintegration of the Persian army and the ruination of the empire, which fell into the hands of various warlords. Zoroastrianism also received a deathblow. It enabled the Arabs to develop their empire towards Pakistan.

Battle of Tours: 732

The victory over the Muslims in central France, near Tours in the Loire, by Charles Martel ('the Hammer'), which stopped the Muslim advancement into Europe and initiated Carolingian rule. Charles won despite being outnumbered with 20,000 Carolingian Franks against a Muslim force of 50,000 under Abdul Rahman al-Ghafiqi. Charles' grandson was Charlemagne.

Siege of Jerusalem: 1099

After the successful Siege of Antioch (1098) this was the climax of the First Crusade when the Crusaders seized Jerusalem from the Fatimid Caliphate and established the Kingdom of Jerusalem.

Battle of the Horns of Hattin (for Jerusalem): 1187

This was the victory of Saladin (Sultan of Egypt and Syria 1174–93) over the Crusader forces of Jerusalem, further establishing his Ayyubid dynasty. This resisted the Third Crusade for a time until he was defeated by Richard I at Arsuf (1191); however Richard did not recapture Jerusalem.

Sieges of Constantinople

The Muslims tried to defeat the capital of the Byzantine Empire numerous times but failed. The first was a four-year siege between 674-678. The second was between 717-718. If Constantinople had fallen in these sieges then the Muslims would have invaded Europe with ease; the successful holding out of the Greeks stopped Europe being overrun early on.

However, Constantinople finally fell to the Muslims in 1453.

Battle of Mohacs: 1526

Victory of Suleiman the Magnificent over Louis II of Hungary, ensuring that the Muslims held power in South-Eastern Europe.

Battle of Lepanto: 1751

Lepanto is a strait at the western entrance to the Gulf of Corinth. It was the scene of a naval battle in which the fleet of the Holy League (the papacy, Venice, and Spain) under the

command of Don John of Austria defeated a large Turkish fleet, temporarily ending the Turkish naval threat in the Mediterranean.

The Third Battle of Panipat: 1761

Victory of Ahmad Shah Abdali, Muslim King of Afghanistan, against the Hindu Maratha Empire in India. This was one of the biggest battles fought in the 18th century with the largest number of casualties from a classic formation battle; around 70,000 killed and about 30,000 dying from wounds. This halted Maratha advances in the north.

Sudan 1885

After European activity to stop the slave trade, the economy of Sudan was in crisis. This led to the rise of Mahdist forces (a Muslim messianic movement). Muhammad Ahmed al-Mahdi proclaimed himself the Mahdi (messiah) in 1881 and declared jihad against Ottoman rulers and stated that all Turks were kafirs who must be killed. He raised an army and started a religious war. His victory created an Islamic state that reinstated slavery. His forces killed General Gordon in the Siege of Khartoum (1885).

Assessment of Islam

I will endeavour, in this assessment, to stick to hard facts and logic and avoid all invective and partisan feelings so that any Islamic scholar could accept that what I state is factually true or an accurate deduction from Islamic scripture and history.

Authority

Islam is supposed to be a religion of the book (the Qur'an) but this is questionable.

The Qur'an is self-contradictory in many places while in others it is unintelligible. Islamic scholars acknowledge this and it is why the doctrine of abrogation (progressive revelation) had to be developed so that later passages determine earlier confusing ones.

The Qur'an is supposed to be a dictation from heaven to Muhammad who wrote it down. In fact Muhammad did not write it all down neither did he collate it into a cohesive whole. It was memorised for many years leading to different readings. After his death the Qur'an had to be edited at least twice by scholars leading to a standard reading, though this was again revised later.

The Qur'an is insufficient for any Muslim to know how to deal with life. This is why various writings appeared after Muhammad died (the Sunna) to answer such questions. Why would God give a scripture to people that is insufficient to deal with all eventualities? In fact, what determines policy for Muslims is the life of Muhammad determined by the Sunna as interpreted by one of many schools of law; thus we have many contradictory schools of Islam.

Even in Muhammad's lifetime some rules were changed when situations altered, such as the direction of prayer, the times of prayer or drinking wine. Since a holy God cannot change, then Muhammad cannot have spoken for God in the first instance.

Muhammad

Many contemporaries of Muhammad questioned his authority as a prophet since he performed no miracles. This has vexed Islamic apologists to this day. Some have invented stories to deal with this (such as his writing of the Qur'an despite being completely illiterate).

Since the life of Muhammad sets all the precedents of standards for Muslims, this would include:

- Rape.
- Incest.
- Murder.
- Beheading.
- Massacres.
- Polygamy.
- Paedophilia.
- Lying.

Dualism

Following the bipolar character of Muhammad, there is an incipient dualism within Islam (see 'religious practices'). This enables contradictions to be held at the same time. Thus there are contradictions in the Qur'an and the Hadith, but these are excused in various ways. Muhammad contradicted himself multiple times, first viewing Jews as brothers then as enemies; first being a religious prophet then a warrior-ruler; first writing spiritual scriptures about heaven and hell then developing a political system of power for world conquest. Early Islam had no jihad, then (after Muhammad's rejection) there is violent jihad.

Everywhere you look in Islam there is dualism: in biography, history, teachings, scriptures, doctrines, practices and so on. In ethics this dualism leads to serious problems; thus women should be honoured as Allah's handmaidens but they should also be beaten for insubordination and are worth half a man in law.

Internecine strife

The history of Islam is a history of internal confrontation, splits and fragmentation which often led to violence and war between Muslims. Much of this stems from the historical cultural characteristics of Arabs, Mongols and Turks (the main Muslim groups) which had always been damaged by internal tribal warfare.

Thus Islam began by Arab tribes warring against each other, and even division within individual tribes, until gradually Muhammad's control became the dominant factor in Arabia. But the urge to war against Muslim brethren continued throughout history and continues in jihad to this very day; Islam is beset by division and fragmentation.

This probably derives from the incipient dualism within Islam, first emanating from the duality exhibited by Muhammad. Contradictions within Islam lead to groups favouring one side or the other, which leads to dissension and then opposition. The doctrines of jihad and apostasy then enable divisions to become violent attacks – one side calls the other an apostate and this enables him to kill another Muslim. I can think of no other faith group where internal division led to violence and war for centuries between factions of the same religion.

We can summarise this as follows:

- There was division and strife over what the standard text of the Qur'an was. This division continues to this day.
- There are divisions regarding what constitutes a genuine hadith (particularly between Sunnis and Shi'ites). Only Bukhari and Muslim are agreed by most. Some sects deny all hadiths.
- There is huge division regarding which family constitutes the genuine caliph.
- There was continual doctrinal division creating multiple sects within Islam.
- There are great contradictions between the various schools of Islamic law.
- There are contradictions between political systems of government; e.g. theocratic (Saudi Arabia), Alawite (Syria), Socialism (Libya under Gaddafi), tolerant (Iraq

under Saddam¹⁹⁷), hard-line (Gulf States) or secular (Turkey under Ataturk; Iran before the revolution).

- There is division between moderates, liberals, fundamentalists, radicals and extremists.
- There is antagonism from legalistic fundamentalists to mystical Sufis.
- There is antagonism between those who favour reason and those who reject it.
- There are contradictions regarding the benefit and applications of philosophy.
- Some sects affirm predestination / fatalism while others emphasise human responsibility.
- There are disagreements about the use of state-sponsored terrorism.
- There are disagreements about the approach to Israel.
- Most Muslims advocate polygamy but some factions are monogamous.
- Some Islamic nations have modernised while others condemn such modernism.

The nature of Islam means that there can be no end to these contradictions, disagreements divisions and warfare. Muslims will continue to fight other Muslims as they always have done.

Religion vs. politics

Although Islam began as a new religion, or rather a reformatting of earlier religions (Judaism, Christianity, Zoroastrianism and Arab paganism) within a few years it became much more a political system seeking world domination by ruthless forced conversions and extermination of unbelievers.

The political system, working through various forms of Islamic law, not only seeks world domination but the complete submission of all populations to the rigorous, legalistic regulations that are part of it. Such rules go much further than spirituality and demand social conformity to a high degree.

These statutes would be considered ruthless, arbitrary, tyrannical, intolerant and violent by most peaceful cultures. Thus Islamic law is misogynistic, despotic, brutal to unbelievers, implacable against non-Islamic cultures and intolerant of certain social groups.

It also promotes ethics that are an affront to humanity: raping women (including young children); death sentences for civil and religious transgressions (e.g. adultery, homosexuality, apostasy) including young children, brutal warfare, slavery, polygamy, terrorist acts on kafir populations and so on.

Violence

The facts are indisputable; Islam is the most violent religion on earth.

There are over a hundred references in the Qur'an regarding attacking, killing and mutilating unbelievers. The Sunna continues this. Muhammad loved having the sword in hand and never felt closer to God than when killing.

¹⁹⁷ Saddam was tolerant towards ancient Christian communities and to women, who could become MPs. He was not tolerant to his enemies.

The history of Islam is absolute proof that the centre of the religion is violent conquering of others; including rape, torture, beheading and other forms of brutality. There were occasions when a conquered people were spared to some degree, but this was entirely pragmatic based on the need for the population to continue providing food and wealth. Thus while millions of Hindus were killed, some villages were spared as dhimmis, despite not being a people of the 'book' (contrary to Muhammad).

What is shocking in Islam is the fact that much of its violence has been directed within. In history Muslims have repeatedly attacked and conquered other Muslims. Many of the jihadi terrorist attacks today are Muslim-on-Muslim violence while the vehement hatred between Sunnis and Shi'ites is proverbial.

The Medinan strategy

The actions of Muslim immigrants into the west – seeking to gradually take over society, as outlined in this paper, are merely following the methods established by Muhammad.

When Muhammad was at Mecca trying to proselytise, Islam was then tolerant, peaceful and centred on monogamous worship and overcoming polytheistic idolatry. This was unsuccessful and eventually Muhammad fled to Yathrib (Medina).

At Yathrib Islam ceased being tolerant and spiritual and became a warlike political system of control. Muhammad changed from considering Jews and Christians as allies ('people of the book') to viewing them as enemies.

In Yathrib there were three tribes of wealthy assimilated Jews that made the city prosperous and two tribes of Arabs that were in league with the Jews, though there were some contentions between everybody. Muhammad was given refuge in Yathrib.

Seeking to bite the hand that fed him, Muhammad developed his followers and slowly gained more and more influence in the town, both officially and socially. Gradually, things were changed to favour Muslims and they began to assume more and more power.

When Muhammad considered that he had sufficient numbers of followers that could prevail, he attacked the three tribes of Jews one by one. The first two were exiled (but only due to the intercession of certain Arabs) and their property stolen. The third tribe was slaughtered and enslaved. All the men were beheaded in public in one day (over 800) and the women and children used as slaves.

Muhammad established himself as the chief of Yathrib, then renamed as Medina ('City of the Prophet'), and the whole town was reformed into an Islamic community under the control of Muhammad's laws. It then became a centre for warlike raids, invasions and expansionist strategies.

This is the strategy of Muslims to this very day. Everywhere Muslims have entered a society as migrants, they eventually took over and controlled it in time. The Medinan Strategy is well underway in Europe and especially in Britain, where London is the centre of western jihad – the struggle to overthrow western, Christian, democracies.

Primitive culture

The nature of Islam is that it hinders progressive growth of science and the arts. This is due to the theology that Muhammad ended God's revelation and that God's creation is impenetrable because it is a divine creation; man must not meddle or probe into God's way of doing things in nature. The prevailing Sunni theology also denies any cause and effect in nature, thus denying science.

There were two exceptions to this in history, the golden ages of Islam in Baghdad (before the Mongol invasion) and Moorish Spain. Yet there are three key reasons for this.

The first is that the golden age in Baghdad was the result of a caliph that contradicted Muhammad's teachings and introduced Aristotelian philosophy into Islam, leading to philosophical speculations using reason, which was followed by a development of the arts and sciences. Islamic purists (such as Sunni extremists) denounce introducing reason into Islamic policies. Without the work of Greek, and to a lesser extent Christian and Persian, philosophy and science this would not have occurred.

The second is particularly notable in Spain where Muslims were very influenced by the cultural forms (especially art and architecture) they discovered in other cultures, which they then adapted into their own styles. Again, without conquering these countries this development would not have occurred.

The third reason is that much of the work was performed by dhimmis under Muslim rule. The wisdom did not emanate from Arabs. Over time the number of dhimmis always diminished due to deaths and conversions; life as a dhimmi was simply too oppressive. Thus Arab states never really prospered (until the oil business).

Just as Arab culture before Muhammad was not technologically advanced but was basically feuding tribal, often nomadic, societies, so Islamic states that have avoided western influences remained very primitive. The more radical and fundamentalist an Islamic society is, the more primitive it is. Those Islamic countries that progressed and became more technological were those that had secular governments committed to adapting western ideas in law, technology, education, commerce, art and science, such as the latter part of the Ottoman Empire, modern Turkey, Syria, Libya and Iraq.

Even today, half of all Arabs are illiterate. The total economic output of all Arab countries (without oil) is equal to that of Spain.¹⁹⁸

You can see a Saudi Arab person confirming this backward effect in Islam: The Sanctify YouTube channel, '*A wise honest Arab Muslim man tells Muslims the truth about themselves*', uploaded 5 October 2011. The man in question is Ibrahim al-Buleihi, a former Saudi Shura council member. The interview was originally televised on Al-Arabiya TV, 26.2.10.

Freedom

Islam denies all personal liberty. It denies freedom of speech, freedom of expression, freedom of appearance in women, and freedom of religion.

¹⁹⁸ Warner; Political Islam, vol. 3, p50.

If you disagree with Islam, Muhammad's example and doctrine of jihad means your death. You cannot deny Islam and live. Islam demands total submission, thus Muhammad killed all those in Arabia who disagreed with him about religion.

If you are a Muslim but change your mind about Islam you will be killed. There is no freedom to apostatise. Islam says that apostasy is a crime worse than mass murder.

Islam's practice of slavery is not libertarian. Even within western cultures immigrant Muslims practice sex-slavery. Throughout history, Muslims have dominated slavery, including selling all the slaves to white men that took them to America.

Women are not free in Islam; multiple restrictions are placed upon them, including being beaten by husbands for lack of obedience. Women are repeatedly killed for trivial offences.

Islam allows no freedom of criticism. If you offend Muslims or criticise the Qur'an, you will be persecuted. Thus there is no freedom of the press.

There is no freedom of justice in Islam. Kafirs cannot testify against Muslims under Sharia Law. A Muslim is not to be executed for killing a kafir. Women only have half the testimony value of a Muslim man. Sharia has one set of values for the Muslim and another set for a kafir. Islam does not start off on the legal basis that all men are equal.

Prisoners have no rights. Muhammad repeatedly tortured prisoners to death; both the Sunna and the Qur'an allow for torture.

Honour and loyalty

Islam cares nothing about human affections, family honour, loyalty to friends and relatives and so on. Unless you are a Muslim, you are to be hated as a kafir.

Muhammad demonstrated this with his uncle, Abu Talib. His uncle adopted him when orphaned, brought him up, taught him to be a businessman, and became his protector when Muhammad started preaching in Mecca, but he died a kafir. When he died Muhammad's first words were to condemn him to hell.

Today we see the terrible effects of honour killings where parents kill their children for Islam and children kill their parents.

Human rights

There are no human rights in Islam; all rights go to Muslims alone; the kafir can only expect precaution and death.

There is no humanity in the Qur'an; it just explains the differences between Muslims and kafirs.

Islam works outside western civilisation and has no analogy with it. It cannot be married with western values. Islam cannot participate in democracy because it demands total submission.

Deception

The incipient dualism within Islam centres upon the opposition of Muslims for kafirs. This enables Muslims to deceive kafirs as a matter of course. Kafirs can be lied to, cheated, deceived, misled and so on.

This is why Muslims can tell lies about Islam, such as that it is a religion of peace or that Christians and Muslims worship the same God, when they know this is untrue. The point of deception is to further jihad – using any means to advance the cause of Islam and take over all cultures. Jihad includes: deception and any force that can bring about submission to Islam. Such things include: money, the media, culture, religion, family, immigration, laws, government, power, tribalism, propaganda, and psychology.

The only effective answer to this deception is for Christians to have sufficient knowledge of Islam. Without this understanding they cannot defeat Muslims in any argument because they will be lied to.

Thus we must note:

- *Taqiyya*: Muslims can swear on the Qur'an in court and deliberately lie because they know that Allah will forgive them since they are working against the kafir. [See 'Deception' earlier.]
- *Al-Hudaybiya*: Any treaty enacted between western nations and Muslims states are pointless. It is a principle of Islam to break treaties if it enables jihad. [See 'Life of Muhammad' earlier.]

Western leaders need to get wise regarding what they are dealing with.

Exemplars of Islam

The simple fact is that the modern expressions of Islam that are most faithful to: a) Muhammad and b) the teachings of the Qur'an and Sunna are, ISIS, the Taliban and Saudi Arabia.

Now western commentators affirm that most Muslims are peaceful and moderate, being pro-active within western democracies but the fact is that these are apostate Muslims and not true ones. Such folk are not obeying Muhammad at all. Those who are truly following the teachings of Islam are what the western world calls 'radical Islamists', 'fundamentalist Muslims', 'Salafists' or 'jihadis'. The extremes found in Saudi Arabia which the western world condemns are but normal consequences of Muhammad's teachings and example. ISIS beheading captives is normal Islam; something perpetuated throughout history. Acts of terrorism, such as suicide bombings or massacres, are just normal Islam. The thousands of rapes recently committed by Muslim migrants into Europe are normal Islam; Muslims can abuse kafir women and even kill them; sex-slaves are normal.

The west has simply got to wake up to this fact. This is what true Islam is.

Comparison with Christianity

Islam is a religion of **submission**; that is what 'Islam' means. In practice it means violent subjugation of all nations until they submit to be: converts, slaves or dead. Christianity is a

religion of **substitution**. It is founded upon the fact that Christ, the Son of God, died for those of humanity that would believe on Him and call on His name. Islam's god is a cruel dictator. Christ is a substitutionary sacrifice.

Islam is also based upon hate; it is truly a hate-religion. If you refuse to submit to Islam, you will be killed and are '*odious*' to Allah and his believers. Christianity is a religion that commands love for all; even one's enemies. Christ was the perfect example of this when he died for those who rebelled against him and broke his laws.

Finally, the ethics of Islam is based upon subjection, ruthlessly enforced. It has multiple sections of society that are treated with derision or violence, such as women, dhimmis, slaves and kafirs. The basis of Christian ethics is 'treat others as they you would have them treat you' (the Golden Rule), which has become the basis of western democratic societies.

Truly, Islam is the opposite of Christianity and thus is the product of the enemy of Christianity.

The point

The west needs to wake up to the truth about Islam and teach it to their populations so that realistic policies can be developed to protect non-Muslim people.

The fact is that true Muslims hate everybody that is not a true Muslim and seeks their conversion, death or slavery; that includes moderate Muslims and apostate Muslims. Muhammad said that it was a sin to sit at home and not take up the sword in jihad. Moderate Muslims in the west that live in peace are not Islamic by definition.

Fundamentalist Muslims are growing in this country by leaps and bounds and are slowly strengthening to take the country over and make it a caliphate. It is sheer folly to let this continue without action. How many atrocities and massacres will be necessary to convince the government of this dire situation?

Conclusion

We need to point out a number of basic facts that we have established about Islam and Muhammad.

The Qur'an, in the form that is available today (there are different versions), was not the direct work of Muhammad. He did not write down a definitive text; in fact the Qur'an was originally only meant to be recited and memorised. Furthermore, Muhammad was not very literate. When it was committed to writing much of it was contradictory, confused and incomprehensible. There were also a number of variant readings. This led to revisions of the texts by collators to establish an authoritative reading. Yet this revision was done more than once using several different editors decades after the death of Muhammad.

Now this is not insurmountable (the Bible text has also been revised in several versions) but Muslims claim that the Qur'an was written by Muhammad writing down the dictation of an angel. This cannot be sustained by the historic facts, or even by the Hadith.

Other Muslim scriptures also contradict the Qur'an in a number of places. There are even parts of the Hadith that contradict other parts.

Muhammad never produced any miracles to prove his divine status as God's messenger. This was a common accusation during his lifetime and one that has never been defended adequately. This contrasts with the OT prophets, Jesus, as well as the apostles of Jesus, all of which produced multiple miracles to verify their status.

Then we have the various practices of Islam. These did not all originate with Muhammad and they are not detailed in the Qur'an. Some have changed several times, such as how many times a day one is to pray, or the direction of prayer. It is only with later scholastic legislation that the details of Muslim worship were fully laid down and then even this varies in different schools and sects. While there may be some unanimity on essentials, there is no unity on details; thus no party can claim to be worshipping exactly as Muhammad intended because we simply do not know.

Muslims are, in general, misogynists. A woman has half the value of a man in court and in many cultures is severely restricted in personal freedom or even brutally oppressed. Some radical forms of Islam flog women for minor infractions of Islamic law while Saudi Arabia regularly beheads women in public arenas for sport, such as for adultery. In other cases they are stoned to death. Genital mutilation is practised in some Muslim cultures to ruin a girl's sexual life. Some Islamic schools allow for polygamy while others deny it, or discourage it.

Finally, we have the essential fact about the political character of Islam, that it is fuelled by violence and war and intends to conquer the earth by killing everyone who does not submit to Islam. It has proved to be the bloodiest religion of all time; not only in terms of the number of wars and battles (which it wins hands down) but the methods used; which include beheading, rape, crucifixion, brutality, torture and mutilation. These are not the actions of a few jihadis but the command and practice of Muhammad himself. All good Muslims must commit to this violence or they deny the Qur'an and the Hadith. According to the teaching and precedent of Muhammad himself, modern moderate Muslims in the west are apostate and unbelievers.

Islam claims to be all about submission; i.e. submission to God. In fact, Islam is all about domination.

- The intention of Islam is to dominate the whole world and this is to be achieved by violent methods followed by despotic control.
- Muhammad dominated his followers.
- Within Islam, males dominate females; husbands dominate wives.
- Muslims dominate slaves; slavery is something that is highly prized in Islam.
- Muslims dominate dhimmis.
- Religious clerics (of various types) dominate ordinary Muslims.
- National Muslim leaders, such as the House of Saud, dominate Muslim populations.
- Muslim culture intends to dominate and extinguish all other cultures.

Since Britain has 3.5 million Muslims in the population, and since this is growing every day by immigration and births, and since a significant proportion of that Muslim society is intent on overthrowing the state and establishing Sharia Law, non-Muslims need to educate themselves about what Islam is.

Nothing in this paper should be used to generate hate or bigotry. Muslims that you meet should be treated with respect, dignity and peace. Most Muslims that you meet will not know what is revealed in this book themselves, many would be shocked. In conversations with Muslims you should share this and show the alternative in Christianity. In fact, I am told that there is an unprecedented rise in the number of conversions to Christianity by Muslims as more is understood about the violence of jihad, exemplified in ISIS.

It is the problem of the government to understand the political aspect of Islam (which it has signally failed to do) and take necessary measures. Whether they can prevent a gradual take-over by Muslims remains to be seen. What is more likely is a civil war as nationalists become more provoked by Salafist activity in once British towns. This is already beginning to happen now.

In all this Christians must remain true to God's law. They must act peacefully, kindly, wisely, lovingly, humbly and set a moral example to all. We do not fight. We do not engage in aggressive political activism. If it came to a Muslim take-over of society, our task is the same as many before us – to suffer persecution willingly as believers in Christ.

Bibliography

Bold = especially useful in this paper.

Anderson, JND (ed.); *The World's Religions*, IVF (1965). Islam article by Anderson.

Buck, Charles; *Theological Dictionary*, (revised edition, E Henderson), art. 'Mahometanism', William Tegg & Co. (1847)

Beaver, R Pierce (et. al. eds.); *The World's Religions*, Lion, (1982).

Bell, John; Mahometanism, included in (no ed.) *The Religions of the World*, Charles Griffin & Co., (n.d.).

Boston, Andrew G; FrontPageMagazine.com, '*The sacred Muslim practice of Beheading*', 13 May 2004.

Bullock, Alan & Trombley, Stephen (Eds.); *The New Fontana Dictionary of Modern Thought*, Harper Collins, (1999).

Derbyshire, Ian D, Speake, Jennifer (Eds.); *Dictionary of World History*, Brockhampton Press (1994).

Gilchrist, John; *Jam' Al-Qur'an: The codification of the Qur'an text*, TMFMT, (1989).

Hinnells, John R. (Ed.); *A Handbook of Living Religions*, Article 'Islam' Alford T Welch, Penguin, (1991).

Marozzi, Justin; *Tamerlane: Sword of Islam, conqueror of the world*, Harper Perennial, (2004).

New Oxford Encyclopaedia, multiple topics.

New Oxford Dictionary, multiple topics.

Odham's Young People's Encyclopaedia; multiple articles.

Phillips, Melanie; *Londonistan*, Gibson Square (2006).

Ridenour, Fritz; *So what's the difference?*, Regal, (1974).

The Religion of Peace (TROP): *What makes Islam so different?*

The Qur'an (CD-Rom and paperback). Translation by Abdullah Yusuf Ali, Wordsworth Classics, (2000). In this paper I quote the Qur'an from several different translations to bring out the meaning.

Warner, Bill; *A Self-Study Course on Political Islam (Levels 1-3, three books)*, *The Centre for the Study of Political Islam* (2016). Warner, a scientist, offers multiple useful books and lectures on Islam forming condensed knowledge of primary

sources. These three summarise the politics of Islam. [Note: his system, despite claiming to be scientific, is unwieldy and repetitious. Instead of three books going over the same subjects in deepening ways, one book compiling the information would be far better.]

Warner, Bill; *Why we are afraid, a 1400 year old secret*, YouTube video, 31 August 2012, Tin Ship Productions. This is singled out as a useful concise source on Islamic military history. In one video, with good animated graphic slides, one can see the panorama of Islamic history.

Websites: numerous websites were consulted; including multiple academic Islamic scholars on various topics.

For further detailed research

Ahmad, K (ed.); *Islam: Its Meaning and Message*, Islamic Council of Europe (1975).

Boston, Andrew; *The Legacy of Jihad*, Prometheus Books (2005).

Brill, EJ; *Encyclopaedia of Islam*, Brill (1993).

Gabrieli, Francesco; *Arab Historians of the Crusades*, Barnes & Noble (1983).

Guillaume, A; *The life of Muhammad*, Oxford University Press, (1982). Translation of the Sira.

Holt, PM; Lambton, AKS & Lewis, B (eds.); *The Cambridge History of Islam*, 2 vols., Cambridge University Press (1970).

Levy, Reuben; *The Social Structure of Islam*, Cambridge University Press (1969).

Watt, WM; *Islamic Philosophy & Theology*, Edinburgh University Press (1979).

Watt, WM; *Islamic Political Thought*, Edinburgh University Press (1968).

Watt, WM; *Muhammad: Prophet & Statesman*, Oxford University Press (1974).

Scripture quotations are from The New King James Version
© Thomas Nelson 1982

Paul Fahy Copyright © 2016
Understanding Ministries
<http://www.understanding-ministries.com>

Appendix One

Glossary

Abrogation

Since the Qur'an is filled with contradictions, the doctrine of abrogation was developed which says that the later verses have more authority than an earlier verse; i.e. progressive revelation.

Ansars

Lit. 'the helpers'. These were the first converts in Medina who gave money and shelter to Muhammad's followers.

Apostate

Someone who has abandoned Islam. The Qur'an states that this is the worst sin. They were killed by Muhammad.

Caliph

A political and religious leader of Islam. A combination of both pope and king.

Dhimmi

Kafirs tolerated in Islamic society but treated as third class citizens and made to pay a tax. Originally only monotheists with a written scripture (Jews, Christians & Zoroastrians) could claim this protected status, but later it was extended to others in Pakistan and India.

Fatwa (Fatwah)

A ruling on a point of Islamic law given by a recognised authority. It is often an edict of condemnation by a Muslim religious leader, frequently including a death sentence.

Ghira

Absolute control of a woman's sexuality is part of a man's ghira (pride, honour).

Imam

A religious teacher of Islam of the Sunni sect.

Infidel

[Equals 'kafir'.] A Jew or a Christian considered as apostate from Islam; 'people of the book' that are not Muslims.

Isnad

The chain of witnesses who relayed a hadith. The source must have personally heard/saw the story. The chain is long since the Hadiths were written down 200 years after Muhammad died.

Jihad

'Struggle'; everything done in order to win the world for Islam. It includes, but is not limited, to violence and war.

Jinn

Roughly equates to a spirit that can be good or evil which are said to be made of fire. Some of them are Muslims but not all. The English word 'genie' stems from this.

Jizya

Poll tax for Dhimmi.

Kafir

Usually defined as an unbeliever, a non-Muslim, someone who rejects Islam. Yet this is not a strong enough definition since it is used in the most severe hateful and abusive manner. Infidels, polytheists, atheists and pagans are all kafirs.

Madrassa

An Islamic religious school.

al-Mahdi

(The 'rightly-guided one'). This is the messiah figure of certain Shi'a groups. In Shi'ite belief it is the twelfth imam, who is expected to return and triumph over injustice. In popular Muslim belief, a spiritual and temporal leader who will rule before the end of the world and restore religion and justice.

From time to time a Mahdi has arisen and instigated war on infidels. For example, Muhammad Ahmad of Dongola [1843–85] claimed to be the Mahdi in Sudan. His revolutionary movement captured Khartoum, overthrew the Egyptian regime and killed General Gordon there in 1885. In the resultant British Sudan War, Herbert Kitchener [1850-1916] defeated the Mahdist forces at Omdurman in 1898.

Mullah

A religious teacher of Islam of the Shia sect.

Quraysh

The tribe Muhammad came from.

Salafist, Salafism

Puritanical, fundamentalist type of Islam.

Shariah

Islamic law based upon the Qur'an, Sira and Hadith.

Shia

Those who follow Ali, about 10% of Muslims, based chiefly in Iran and Iraq. The differences with Sunnis are mainly political.

Sunnis

Those who follow the Sunna, about 90% of Muslims.

Sunna

What Muhammad said and did setting the ideal for Muslim life. It comprises the Sira (biography) and the Hadith (traditions).

Sura

A chapter of the Qur'an.

Umma

The Muslim political, religious and cultural community.

Appendix Two

The Crusades

The reason for this appendix

Whining mistaken liberals

History is a poorly taught subject today and society is a worse place for this. We are seeing people commit the same foolish policies, strategies, crimes and mistakes made in history because they have not learned from history.

Over and over again today commentators, the media and foolish liberals, who are fixated on stopping 'Islamophobia', berate Christians for the Crusades. They talk about, '*all the death caused during the crusades*'; that, '*Christians wiped entire races from the earth during the Crusades*';¹⁹⁹ and other such nonsense.

The truth

Firstly, true Christians are non-violent. The genuine Christian church does not gather armies to wage foreign wars, whatever the cause. The teaching of Christ is to love enemies.

Religious wars are initiated by people in positions of power with something to lose; people who are not regenerated believers but are called 'Christian'. For example mediaeval popes whose lands were threatened by Muslim invaders.

Secondly, the Crusades were a reaction to centuries of aggression, attacks, invasions and massacres by Muslim armies. The Crusades were not pre-emptive, but defensive. Note the following:

| Islamic aggression | The Crusades |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| 637: Jerusalem conquered. | 458 years before the First Crusade. |
| 641: Alexandria fell to Muslims. | 454 years before the First Crusade. |
| 642: Egypt overrun. | 453 years before the First Crusade. |
| 652: Italy invaded and plundered. | 443 years before the First Crusade. |
| 667: Muslims invade southern Italy (Sicily conquered in 902). Muslims raid southern Italy, Corsica and Sardinia repeatedly. | 428 years before the First Crusade. |
| 674: Constantinople first besieged (for four years). | 421 years before the First Crusade. |
| 711: Spain invaded and conquered. | 384 years before the First Crusade. |
| 717: Constantinople besieged again. | 378 years before the First Crusade. |
| 732: France invaded. Defeat of Muslims at Tours stops an Islamic invasion of all Europe. | 363 years before the First Crusade. |
| 846: Rome sacked. Desecration of burial sites of Peter and Paul. Rome attacked again in 849. | 249 years before the First Crusade. |
| 1009: Destruction of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem. | 86 years before the First Crusade. |
| 1071: Byzantines defeated and lose a large part of the empire. Emperor begs the west for help. | 24 years before the First Crusade. |
| Formal Byzantine appeal to the pope. | First Crusade: 1095 |
| About two-thirds of ancient Christianity had disappeared under violent jihad before the Crusades began. | |
| | |

The whole Christian world was under threat. Muslim pirates meant that the Mediterranean Sea was no longer safe for trade and travel; this alone brought hardship to many nations.

¹⁹⁹ Statements made in Twitter debates by members of the public.

Trade had to go along land routes and many staple things became very expensive. In the years following several plagues and depopulation, this was serious.

Millions of Christians had been killed; men, women and children; many of these had been tortured and brutally murdered. A million Christians, at least, had been enslaved. Hundreds of thousands of white Christian women had been kidnapped and sold as sex slaves. Thousands of churches had been burned to the ground and Christian sites desecrated.

Some countries were on the brink of capitulating to Islamic aggression; others had been engaged in defensive wars with Islam for centuries (e.g. the Balkans). Christian pilgrims to the Holy Land (not something I agree with) were being killed or kidnapped for ransom. Finally, the Byzantine Empire, a Christian empire that had stood for centuries, was on the verge of falling to Islam.

If anything, Europe was far too slow in combating the Islamic threat.

Introduction

What were the Crusades?

The Crusades were a series of military expeditions (11th–14th centuries) to secure Christian rule over the Muslim-controlled holy places of Palestine. The word ‘crusade’ was formed from the Latin word for ‘cross’ because this was a supposed war for the Christian religion. The cross was emblazoned on the knights’ dress.

The cause of the Crusades

The Crusades were not a pre-emptive strike against Islamic nations. The Crusades were a military response to the continual waves of Muslim invasion and conquest of nations that had been Christian for over 600 years (such as Turkey, the Middle East and North Africa). These had fallen to violent actions by Islamists whereby millions of Christians were killed and women and children sold into slavery. For example one caliph alone destroyed 30,000 churches. Christians were fleeing their ancient towns and there were many cases of brutality, torture and deaths.

This was a Muslim assault on the Byzantine Empire, which was formally Christian, but which had been weakened by wars with Persia and the Black Death which wiped out a third of the population and wrecked the economy. As a result, the emperor at Constantinople pleaded for help from the pope. This was unprecedented since there had been continual rivalry between the head of the western church and the head of the eastern church. The Crusades began as a result of the pope’s response to the eastern emperor.

The various ill-fated campaigns of the Crusades were done to regain lands that had been taken by force by Muslim invasions and occupations. Therefore, castigating them for trying to help Christian nations brutally ravaged by Muslim invaders is insane.

The number of military campaigns waged in the Crusades is a tiny, tiny fraction of the battles waged by Islam, so that they pale into virtual insignificance when compared to Muslim aggression. Furthermore, the number of Muslims killed by Crusaders is a very tiny proportion of the number of non-Muslims killed by Muslims. There were only 31 main battles fought in the 200 years of the Crusades. There were far more battles than this fought in six years during the Second World War.

Motivations of the Crusaders

Contrary to modern claims, it was not to get rich; in fact it caused very many Crusaders to become poor.

The average Crusader had to be landed and wealthy in order to be there. He had to procure weapons, armour, horses, ships and a company of supporters. Like today, 90% of the army are in a supporting role; all these needed paying and providing for.

According to their own written records, the Crusaders stated that their intention was an act of penance and empathy with persecuted Christians under Muslim rule.

Beginnings

In 637 Jerusalem was captured by Arabs from the Byzantine Empire, forcing Islam upon the inhabitants. The Arabs went on to conquer all of Palestine, Syria, North Africa and invaded Spain. However, initially the Arabs were tolerant to Christians going on pilgrimage to the Holy Land; but the symbolic loss of Jerusalem was more than the pope could bear.

In 1071 the Arabs were overcome by the Seljuk Turks making it unsafe for Christians to go on a pilgrimage. At this time the Byzantine Empire was defeated at Manzikert, leading to Muslim expansion into Asia Minor (Turkey) and threatening Constantinople. The Byzantine emperor sent many appeals to western rulers asking for help against the Muslim invasion.

The First Crusade (1095-1099)

In Europe kings and barons were at constant war with each other. The pope considered that a call to arms against a common foe would end this fighting, as well as securing the Holy Land. So Pope Urban II ordered a crusade to oppose the rise to power of the Seljuk Turks interfering with pilgrimages to Palestine. Spiritual benefits were promised to warriors who saw this as an opportunity for acts of valour and honour as well as an economic opportunity (such as opening up new markets).

Preachers, inspired by the pope and the Council of Clermont, proclaimed the message of a coming crusade. One famous preacher was Peter the Hermit, travelling on a donkey round Europe. Hordes of rabble gathered from France and Germany, led by some priests and knights, travelling through Europe in five large bodies. Due to ill preparation they robbed and pillaged wherever they went. Most of them failed to get to Constantinople and those that did were not welcomed by Emperor Alexius. Passing though, they met the Muslim army and were all slain.

Meanwhile the real army of about 500,000 was preparing, led by various dukes and counts, reaching Constantinople in 1097. The Greek Emperor was shocked to learn that they intended setting up a rival kingdom of their own in Palestine, but feared for his own capital, and so helped them on their way.

In 1098 the Crusaders captured Antioch after a seven-month's siege. They captured Jerusalem in 1099 and massacred its inhabitants, establishing a kingdom there under Godfrey of Bouillon. The next year Godfrey died and his brother Baldwin, Count of Edessa, was crowned king. At its greatest point this kingdom stretched from Beirut in the north to the Red Sea in the south. North of Jerusalem lay three Frankish territories acknowledging the King of Jerusalem: the County of Tripoli, the Principality of Antioch and the County of Edessa. Thus for a time the entire western seaboard of the Mediterranean was in the hands of the Crusaders.

In this period two famous orders of knights were established: the Knights Hospitallers (to aid the wounded) and the Knights Templars (to guard pilgrims and Jerusalem).

The Second Crusade (1147–49)

This was inspired by Bernard of Clairvaux and involved King Louis VII of France and Emperor Conrad III (the Holy Roman Emperor) hoping to occupy all Palestine. All this did was to sour relations between the Crusader kingdoms, the Byzantines, and friendly Muslim rulers.

After part of the Crusader lands were recaptured, Crusaders set out from Europe but most of the men died on the way due to starvation and cold weather.

The Third Crusade (1189–92)

This was prompted by Saladin's capture of Jerusalem.

The Crusaders recaptured Acre but achieved little more. King Richard I [1157–99] took part in this Crusade alongside King Philip Augustus of France. Richard won a series of battles, defeating Saladin at Arsuf (1191), but never recaptured Jerusalem.

After an argument, Philip returned to France leaving Richard to campaign alone, forcing him to make peace with Saladin, securing protections for pilgrims to Jerusalem. The French king then took control of Richard's holdings in France.

Returning home, Richard was held hostage by the Holy Roman emperor Henry VI until being released in 1194 on payment of a huge ransom. Richard's long absence caused many problems in England. Though he waged a heroic war, he achieved little in Palestine and lost a great deal in his kingdom.

The Fourth Crusade (1202–04)

This was diverted by Venetian interests to attack Constantinople, which was sacked, making the gulf between Eastern and Western Churches unbridgeable, though some Crusaders benefited from the division of Byzantine territories known as the Latin Empire of the East (1204–61). The emperor of Constantinople was Count Baldwin of Flanders. This briefly replaced the Greek Empire at Constantinople until Michael VIII retook the city in 1261, aided by the Genoese (the rivals of the Venetians).

The Fifth Crusade, Children's Crusade (1218-1221)

This was a very sad crusade to the Holy Land by tens of thousands of French and German children. Most of the children never reached their destination, and were sold into slavery by the captains offering them travel.

The Sixth crusade (1228-1229)

This was led by Emperor Frederick II who won Jerusalem, Nazareth and Bethlehem for the Crusaders without any fighting but using skilful negotiations. However, the Crusaders quarrelled amongst themselves again losing Jerusalem in 1244, which would remain in Muslim hands until 1967.

The Seventh Crusade (1248)

Louis IX of France led this expedition but his army was routed and he was taken prisoner, later ransomed.

The Eighth Crusade (1270)

Louis IX tried again with an expedition against Tunis, but he fell sick and died. Tribute was secured from the Bey (local ruler) but only Prince Edward (later Edward I of England) reached Palestine but left in 1272 empty-handed.

After this there were only minor expeditions against the Turks throughout the 14th – 15th centuries, but none were a serious attempt to regain the Holy Land.

The fall of Acre in 1291 ended the Crusader presence in the Levant. All, except the peaceful Sixth Crusade, were marred by greed and brutality: Jews and Christians in Europe were slaughtered by rabble armies on their way to the Holy Land. The papacy was incapable of controlling the immense forces at its disposal. However, the Crusades attracted such leaders as Richard I and Louis IX, greatly affected European chivalry, and for centuries, its literature.

While deepening the hostility between Christianity and Islam, they also stimulated economic and cultural contacts of lasting benefit to European civilisation, introducing many products such as cotton, muslin, damask, mirrors, sugar, maize, lemons and melons. Furthermore the flow of knowledge, art and science led to the European Renaissance.

In 1453 Constantinople fell to the Muslims ending the Byzantine Empire. By 1529 the Turks had reached the gates of Vienna, which was surrounded again in 1683.

The point for our purpose here is that the Crusades, often held up as something the west should repent for, were a response to the aggression of Muslim advances and were not preemptive. Neither were there many military battles. Furthermore, though something of a mess overall, they did check the Muslim advance into Europe and did lead to the Renaissance. There is no comparison between the few military exploits of the Crusaders and the savagery of 1400 years of Islamic warfare, brutality, rape and slavery.

While I do not condone the actions of the Crusaders I merely observe the facts, their worst sins were killing European and Byzantine Christians, who were innocent. The Crusaders' attack on Palestine was an entirely logical defensive response to Muslim aggression.

Modern liberals should note this; were it not for the Crusades the Islamic advance could not have been stopped and all Europe would have become Muslim. As it was, Muslims besieged Vienna twice and advanced throughout central France. Whining liberal feminists moaning about the Crusades would today be wearing as hijab, and have no rights at all in a Muslim caliphate similar to ISIS, without the Crusades.

Appendix Three

Violence in the Bible

Christians that criticise Islam for its violence need to explain why the violence within the Bible, especially the OT, is not binding on believers today.

Anyone reading the OT can point to the genocide of Canaanites demanded by God and accuse Christianity of being violent. That is a reasonable criticism at first sight, but this merely means that the accuser has not read the entire Bible.

Progressive revelation

God chose to gradually explain his decree of salvation through the redemption found in Jesus Christ. The historical narratives in the OT are part of an introduction to the understanding of salvation and righteousness in order to put salvation into context. The NT itself calls the Old Covenant, which dominated the OT, a shadow of what is true in Christ. It is not the reality, it is a shadow; a mere glimpse of what is real.

Which are a shadow of things to come, but the substance is of Christ. Col 2:17

There are priests who offer the gifts according to the law; who serve the copy and shadow of the heavenly things. Heb 8:4-5

For the law, having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the things. Heb 10:1

Thus the OT stories became illustrations of doctrinal points made in the New Covenant and help us to understand more fully what these mean.

These things became our examples. 1 Cor 10:6

The Canaanite issue

The great problem in the Bible is the issue of the Canaanite genocide. There is no doubt that this was, indeed, genocide; Canaanites were to be wiped off the face of the earth. But we have to take these factors into account.

- We have to understand the time period and its culture. Inter-tribal war was a constant feature of this time and it was conducted with much cruelty. Expanding nations attacked states in their path and destroyed them; that was a simple fact of life. The destruction of the Canaanites was nothing new.
- There was a reason for the genocide. God had come to the end of his patience with that sinful nation as he had with others before. Those at Sodom and Gomorrah were so evil that God decided to wipe them off the face of the earth to cleanse the world; he did this through divine fire. Before the flood, mankind's sin were so appalling and so constant that he destroyed the whole earth in a flood, except for eight righteous people. The sin of the Canaanites was so terrible and constant that God decided they must all be removed from the earth; he selected Israel to be the means of this destruction.
- The violence against the Canaanites was temporary and not a permanent feature. God did not demand that Israel destroyed all other nations. In fact, God was even merciful to some Canaanite tribes and individuals.
- The violence was local and not a permanent principle. The violence in Islam is permanent and universal.
- Warfare is found under the Old Covenant but not under the New Covenant.

Defensive wars in the OT

The violence in the rest of the OT is defensive. David is the greatest warrior and yet he was a man after God's heart with a tender spirit. His wars were necessary to defeat those attacking Israel, especially the Philistines.

Other great warriors were also attacking nations that had conquered Israel and subjugated the people; such as the deliverers in the period of the Judges.

The New Covenant command

The final word on what Christians must do is found in the teaching of Jesus and his apostles sent to follow him. All this teaching found in the NT explains the New Covenant life and this demands pacifism and non-violence under any circumstances.

Thus the Christian must:

I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you. Matt 5:44

But I say to you who hear: Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, and pray for those who spitefully use you. Lk 6:27

Love your enemies, do good, and lend, hoping for nothing in return. Lk 6:35

Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse. Rm 12:14

Even in the OT, after the period of fulfilling God's judgment on the Canaanites, Israelites were commanded to be more kind to enemies than other nations.

Now when the king of Israel saw them, he said to Elisha, 'My father, shall I kill *them*? Shall I kill *them*?' But he answered, 'You shall not kill *them*. Would you kill those whom you have taken captive with your sword and your bow? Set food and water before them, that they may eat and drink and go to their master'. 2 Kg 6:21-22

If your enemy is hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he is thirsty, give him water to drink. Prov 25:21

Thus the early history of Christianity is filled with martyrs who gave their lives to their persecutors. In this we see a very different history to Islam. Christians did not wage war with their persecutors, even when thousands were killed and massacred.

What about Christian wars?

Firstly, there have been very few wars centred upon religion. I can think of the Thirty Years War in Germany, the Kappel Wars in Switzerland²⁰⁰ and the Crusades in Palestine, off the cuff.²⁰¹ Many of the wars attributed to Christianity were simply wars of aggression or defence pursued by nominal Christian leaders for very earthly causes.

²⁰⁰ These were armed conflicts near Kappel am Albis between Protestant and Catholic cantons of the Old Swiss Confederacy during the Reformation. The First War of Kappel in 1529 ended without any battle being fought. The Second War led to the Battle of Kappel in 1531. This was defensive against the Catholics that declared war and defeated the outnumbered exhausted Protestants. A second battle again defeated the Protestants. The ensuing peace saw Catholic dominance but allowed Reformed communities toleration, some strategic communities were forced into Romanism. Cantons were given the right to practice Protestantism or Catholicism. Seven and two half cantons remained Catholic. Four and two halves became Swiss Reformed. A couple of minor wars followed in 1656 and 1712 resulting in minor changes.

²⁰¹ The English Civil Wars, though they involved religious issues, were not centred upon religion but upon removing illegal tyranny. The wars in the Netherlands were much the same.

Aggressive wars are certainly forbidden for Christians, so any ruler pursuing such a war cannot be a true Christian.

Defensive war is a different matter and one much debated. Most people would agree that a defensive war against an aggressor is acceptable and cannot be criticised. Thus many would defend WWII as a defensive war (I do not agree; it could have been avoided). So we can rule out defensive war as being critical of the Christian religion. In my view, defensive war is not allowed either because it involves killing people and that is forbidden.

So Christianity is not a warlike religion. It forbids wars and violence.

What about church violence?

In this I have in mind the Spanish Inquisition or the Roman Catholic massacres of the Huguenots and such like.

This is to be utterly condemned; it is not Christian. Anyone that uses the name of Christ to defend violence against others (often other Christians) is a liar and a blasphemer. No genuine Christian church will demand that its members attack other people.

Conclusion

Warfare and violence in the Bible is limited to the Old Covenant and had good reasons. There is no allowance for violence under the New Covenant in any circumstance. Thus we see believers in Jesus Christ constantly suffering and dying for their faith. In the period of Islam, millions of Christians were killed by Muslims and whole empires that had been Christian were destroyed without trace, in Anatolia, Egypt and North Africa.

Scripture quotations are from The New King James Version
© Thomas Nelson 1982

Paul Fahy Copyright © 2016
Understanding Ministries
<http://www.understanding-ministries.com>